



网络文学天下  
纵横中文网  
www.zongheng.com

# 御天神帝

乱世狂刀◎著

# **Imperial God Emperor**

Chapters 081 - 120

---

**Author: Warring Blades**

**Translation: [Aran Translations](#)**

**Publisher: [Yuki](#)**

---

# Table of Contents

1. [Chapter 081 – The Last Risk](#)
2. [Chapter 082 – The Blood Pool Of The Dragon’s Den](#)
3. [Chapter 083 – A Dog?](#)
4. [Chapter 084 – Four Versus Four](#)
5. [Chapter 085 – Blood Red Gaze](#)
6. [Chapter 086 – I Have Something More Important To Do](#)
7. [Chapter 087 – The Final Move](#)
8. [Chapter 088 – He Wants To Murder Someone](#)
9. [Chapter 089 – Words Reverberating Throughout Ascending Heaven Pavillion](#)
10. [Chapter 090 – It Doesn’t Matter](#)
11. [Chapter 091 – He Can Eat More Than Me](#)
12. [Chapter 092 – I Admit Defeat](#)

13. [Chapter 093 – Third Spirit Spring](#)
14. [Chapter 094 – The Four Moves Of The Unmatched General](#)
15. [Chapter 095 – The Change Within The City](#)
16. [Chapter 096 – The Female Sword Immortal, Wang Jianru](#)
17. [Chapter 097 – The Curses Emitting From The Taoxuan Pavillion](#)
18. [Chapter 098 – One Must Pay For A Murder With Their Life](#)
19. [Chapter 099 – A Spear](#)
20. [Chapter 100 – Go Back And Ask](#)
21. [Chapter 101 – Three Days](#)
22. [Chapter 102 – The Back Of That Silhouette...](#)
23. [Chapter 103 – The City Of Unmoving Darkness](#)
24. [Chapter 104 – I Will Come Find You](#)
25. [Chapter 105 – Surrounded In All Directions](#)

26. [Chapter 106 – Enemies On A Narrow Road](#)
27. [Chapter 107 – The Four Military Leaders](#)
28. [Chapter 108 – An Unexpected Invitation](#)
29. [Chapter 109 – A Shy Youth](#)
30. [Chapter 110 – A Letter Coming From The Front Lines](#)
31. [Chapter 111 – Before Leaving \(1\)](#)
32. [Chapter 112 – The Shadow Of The Bronze Asura](#)
33. [Chapter 113 – The Useless Words Are Finished; Go On Your Way](#)
34. [Chapter 114 – Before Leaving \(2\)](#)
35. [Chapter 115 – The Sudden Change In The Watchpost](#)
36. [Chapter 116 – A Type Of Belief](#)
37. [Chapter 117 – Snow Ground Dragon Ape](#)
38. [Chapter 118 – Just What Is This](#)

39. [Chapter 119 – The Chessboard In The Air](#)

40. [Chapter 120 – Treating The Injuries](#)

## Chapter 081 – The Last Risk

---

“It seems like the things recorded down on that booklet was not wrong in the slightest.”

Ye Qingyu’s heart became increasingly curious towards the contents of the booklet that the old guy had left behind. Within there were many information that even the elders specialising in studying the [Boundary canyon battlefield] did not know. But right now, this information was proven to be real and correct. The value of the booklet, absolutely exceeded his initial estimates.

After collecting all the blood of the flame devil beast, Ye Qingyu sat cross legged on a giant black boulder, recovering. Activating his yuan qi, he used it to restore his body’s injuries.

The scarlet red brands imprinted upon his skin, were like mysterious natural runes, each around the size of a tadpole. As the inner yuan flowed through it, it constantly flickered as if they were alive. Ye Qingyu could distinctly sense, that as the tadpole sized runes flashed on his skin, a scorching and burning power.

As Ye Qingyu activated the nameless breathing technique, these scarlet red runes the size of a tadpole, gradually faded and eventually completely disappeared from his skin. But the strange flame like power, at the time when Ye Qingyu struck out with his fist, still remained.

One hour later.

Ye Qingyu stood up.

The eyebrows that had been burned off by the blood of the flame devil beast had already grown back. And as for his scorched off hair, it had already grown back to a length of around the width of two fingers. After entering the Spirit spring stage, one would enter the realm of a Xiantian life form. In such a stage where inner yuan could be activated to treat his injuries, the recovery of one's body was much more speedier than normal. After around ten days of time, the length of his hair should grow back to its original length.

“I wonder how the situation in the three canyon road is going?”

Ye Qingyu willed his mind and through the [Sentry guard], observed the state on the three battlefields.

After a short period of time he jumped out, soaring away like lightning. Exiting from the pitch black valley, he galloped towards the Northern battlefield.

Within the pitch black valley, the gigantic corpse of the [Flame devil beast] had gradually disappeared and transformed into a huge boulder. According to the formation laws of the [Boundary canyon battlefield], not long afterwards, a new [Flame devil beast] would be born and become the new ruler of this place. But this already had nothing to do with Ye Qingyu and the others anymore.

.....

.....

White Deer academy.

In the centre of the first year practice grounds, underneath the ranking stone mirror.

The cheers continued on, wave after wave.

As opposed to the lifeless atmosphere enveloped with despair, the grounds had now transformed into a joyous ocean of people. White Deer academy had lost the previous three rounds consecutively, with signs that it would be completely crushed. In the fourth round everyone had just hoped for a little pleasant surprise. But no one would have thought that as time gradually passed, the development of the situation, gradually made the students realise, that they had the possibility of victory!

On the ranking stone mirror, another new change appeared.

Lin Nuo and Zheng Kai once again died in battle.

And the person who did not even appear once so far, the Azure Phoenix student Ding Liyou had also died once.

Next to Ye Qingyu's name, his kill count had already become seven.

This represented that within this [Boundary canyon battlefield], Ye

Qingyu had already become an existence like that of the Death God, ruling over all and becoming an invincible presence on this battlefield. Not only did he kill each of the five representatives of the Azure Phoenix students once each, he also managed to kill Lin Nuo and Zheng Kai twice over.

Seven consecutive kills!

This was something that even the Great demon king Blue Sky did not manage to achieve previously.

Although they were not able to spectate what exactly occurred within the [Boundary canyon battlefield], but only through a slight imagination, they could discern what had occurred. They were able to picture the image of demon king Ye, his figure like that of lightning and hurricane. Every ten steps he killed a person, not leaving any traces of his presence in a thousand miles,<sup>1</sup> this kind of heroic and valiant posture. Every White Deer student feel excitement, a hard to control excitement. It was as if the person obtaining such a earth shattering victory was they themselves.

“Quickly look, there’s another new change on the ranking stone mirror...”

“Really? Ahahaha, naturally, demon king Ye does not disappoint us. He has killed another person...Du Sha has died once again. Hahaha, delightful, this is really delightful!”

“Isn’t it eight consecutive kills?”

“I don’t care anymore. From now on, if anyone is to speak bad of the demon king Ye in front of me, then I will definitely fight him over it.” A noble student was so animated that he had forgotten himself, rolling up his sleeves and loudly shouting.

Every White Deer student stared fixedly at the ranking stone mirror, not letting any change that occurred pass through their notice.

“Eh? Xia Houwu has died in battle yet again...”

“This...his three chances of resurrection, will all be used up now?”

“Haha, I’ve long said, that Xia Houwu’s strength is not up to standards for this competition. At the start, he was not able to enter the list of ten. This time, I don’t know how or why he was able to obtain a place to enter the [Boundary canyon battlefield]. This is really too embarrassing and shameful – if it was me, then I would forego my place and give it to someone that actually possesses true strength.”

“After entering the [Boundary canyon battlefield], there is not only fights, but also various types of fortuitous encounters. You can harvest spirit herbs and precious medicines, and you are also able to obtain the yuan qi reward left behind by the Formation Emperor Luoso. This can be counted as something extremely beneficial for the participant so the Xia Hou family paid a huge price and managed to allow Xia Houwu to enter...”

From within the excited crowd, different analysis and explanation were made for every change of the stone mirror.

Some people became heroes.

Some people became cowards.

In this stark contrast and comparison, the success of the victors and the defeat of the losers were even more evident.

“Quickly look, another change has occurred on the stone mirror...Haha, that Ding Liyou has been killed yet again...This time, eh, the little loli Song Xiaojun managed to obtain a kill, what happened? Could the strength of this Ding Liyou really be this weak?”

“Song Xiaojun was able to obtain a kill. She is the third person from the White Deer academy able to kill the Azure Phoenix students.”

“Hahaha, this is too great. I feel like in this very round we will be able to prevail and win.”

“You little brat shut your mouth, we have to preserve our character and must not become someone who has made an inauspicious remark...”

The students of the White Deer academy were both excited but conflicted at the same time. If this round had progressed exactly the same as the previous rounds, and from the start they had been completely suppressed, then the crowd would not have any expectations whatsoever. But when suddenly faced with hope, everyone began to worry that some unexpected incident would occur that would take this hope away from them.

.....

Boundary canyon battlefield.

The battlefield at the North path.

“Thank you brother Qingyu...” The little loli Song Xiaojun jumped up and down excitedly.

With Ye Qingyu’s aid, she had managed to obtain a kill and receive the reward of the battlefield.

The formation corpse of Ding Liyou was felled several metres away.

With the cooperation of Song Xiaojun and Ye Qingyu, she surprisingly managed to kill Ding Liyou.

This Azure Phoenix student walked a similar martial path to hidden assassination, so he previously had hidden himself and did not come out. Previously this person had not appeared in either of the three battlefields, but rather hid and prepared himself to assassinate someone. The assassination technique of this person was absolutely penetrative, erasing all traces of his presence. The moment he appeared from beside you, represented the arrival of your death.

It was a pity that through the Sentry guard, Ye Qingyu was able to discover traces of his movement.

The prepared person met the unprepared person, so therefore Ding Liyou was killed once again.

The previous time that he was killed, was when he had wanted to eliminate Ye Qingyu from the shadows — in reality, he really did manage to heavily injure Ye Qingyu in their first moment of contact. This was the first time that Ye Qingyu had managed to obtain such a heavy wound since entering the Boundary canyon battlefield. But when comparing direct battle power, Ding Liyou could not even match Qin Wushuang and the others. In the end, he was defeated by the moves of the golden armoured king.

And at this time, everyone had fought for a total of two days and one night within the [Boundary canyon battlefield].

The five representatives of the Azure Phoenix academy, Lin Nuo, Zheng Kai, Du Sha, Ding Liyou each of them had died twice already, leaving them on their last chance. And the person with the greatest strength, Xu Ge, still had two opportunities remaining. But Ye Qingyu did not give them a chance to directly fight with him. Using the [Sentry guards], he continuously discovered their location and movements, ambushing and killing them. The situation had already turned extremely unfavourable for the Azure Phoenix academy.

On the battlefield of the Northern path.

“Continue following my previous instructions. Control the lines of soldiers and maintain such a position.”

Ye Qingyu left behind this phrase and once again entered into the

desolate wilderness.

Because of the appearance of the [Sentry guard], the development of this competition proceeded along extremely smoothly. If things continued on at such a rate, at the most in a day's time, Ye Qingyu would be able to kill each of the geniuses of the Azure Phoenix academy three times each. After these haughty geniuses were forcibly ejected from the battlefield, there was no longer a need to destroy the headquarters of the demon rune soldiers for White Deer academy to obtain the final victory.

But Ye Qingyu did not wish for the battle to end so quickly.

Because he still needed to acquire two more important opportunities within the [Boundary canyon battlefield].

Ye Qingyu was absolutely clear in his heart, the opportunity to enter into such a realm like the [Boundary canyon battlefield], would not occur again for a very long time —After all, to open this time's [Boundary canyon battlefield], it needed the combined cooperation of the two of the great academies. Just through White Deer academy alone, there was no way they would be able to activate the battlefield again.

Therefore, he must utilise this opportunity, and firmly grasp every opportunity that was described within the little booklet into his hands.

After leaving the Northern battlefield, he activated his inner yuan and headed towards the West.

Two hours later.

He came to the third valley that was one of the ten forbidden areas of this battlefield.

[Yuan Qi Giant valley].

According to the information recorded within the booklet, the [Yuan Qi giant] was an existence that was comparable to the [Flame Devil beast]. It possessed an extremely dominating strength, with an outer appearance the same as a rock giant. It was also a humanoid monster. This yuan qi giant had inhabited within this valley for generations, absorbing the yuan of heaven and earth at every moment in time. Its blood had already been completely refined to the purest yuan qi energy within this battlefield.

The blood of the [Yuan qi giant], had an amazing property. As long as you swallowed a small mouthful, then it could completely recover your yuan qi if you were at the beginning stages of the Spirit spring stage. It was a rare divine ingredient, comparable to the [Flame devil beast blood]. For Ye Qingyu, this was extremely important because this represented the fact he could constantly perform the four moves of the golden armoured king without rest, and not worry about his yuan qi being completely expended.

He rested a bit at the entrance of the valley, regulating himself to his most optimal condition. Ye Qingyu took a large step in to the valley.

Two hours later.

A Ye Qingyu with tattered clothing walked out of the valley.

“It seems like I have to buy more pairs of clothes in the future. Otherwise, after the fight has ended, I’ll be completely naked....” Ye Qingyu carefully stored away the [Blood of the yuan qi giant] away carefully.

The two bottles of [Blood of the flame devil beast] and the [Blood of the yuan qi giant] could be taken away and brought out of the battlefield. This was an extremely important spoil of the battlefield.

The Ye Qingyu at this time, seemed to cut a sorry figure. But the fluctuation of yuan qi in his body was vigorous and forceful, his eyes bursting with vitality. His strength had constantly increased, his inner yuan like that of a large river surging within his body. In the dantian world, the third [yuan qi kindling] had already been planted, and when the opportunity was right, the third Spirit spring would be excavated.

Such a rate of progress for his strength, made demon king Ye extremely satisfied.

His original plan was to rely upon the rewards of the [Boundary canyon battlefield], and take a step forward to enter the third Spirit spring stage. From the current situation, this plan had already half succeeded.

“Now the only thing left is the last opportunity, but it is also the one with the most danger and risk. But danger and return goes hand in hand; if this gamble pays off successfully, then after leaving from this [Boundary canyon battlefield], I fear that no one will be my opponent within the entire second year of the White Deer academy and I can jump straight into the third year!”

Ye Qingyu was pleased in his heart.

.....

.....

The headquarters of the demon rune soldiers.

Lin Nuo, Zheng Kai, Du Sha and Ding Liyou stood upon the resurrection altar. They all looked at each other, not knowing what to say.

“I would never have thought that we would encounter such a monster.” Lin Nuo lowered his head and sighed, already feeling powerless in his heart.

He and Zheng Kai had been continuously killed directly by the attack of Ye Qingyu. If the first time could be partially counted as an ambush, then the second time was truly a complete domination. Even the two of them added together was not Ye Qingyu’s match, causing the self confidence of these two to completely crumble. No matter whether it was Lin Nuo or Zheng Kai, they firmly believed that if they met Ye Qingyu again, they would still not be his opponent.

“When did White Deer academy manage to recruit such an expert?”

Ding Liyou also had a countenance filled with worry.

He had continuously attempted to assassinate Ye Qingyu, but every time he had returned with defeat. Especially the second time, he was completely toyed with, and in the end killed by the little girl. This was complete humiliation, but there was nothing he could do. For an assassin, the most important weapon was their confidence. But whenever Ding Liyou thought back to the image of that figure, he could not help but feel a sense of defeat; he would never be able to kill that person.

“What should we do after?” The red mole between the brows of Du Sha moved slightly. “We haven’t been able to contact Xu Ge in the slightest. But with his biased views towards us, he is definitely not willing to act in concert with us. Out of the four of us, none of us are able to defeat him, and two on one holds a high chance of failure too. Only if we manage to surround him with three or more people, do we have a chance...”

“But that person appears like a deity and fades like a ghost, as if he had long calculated our location! Every time he is able to accurately grasp the location of our appearance. To want to ambush him, this task is too difficult!” Lin Nuo bitterly smiled.

Du Sha hesitated, then realised it was indeed so.

The group could not help but return to a loss state yet again.

The four of them could be considered famous people within the Azure Phoenix. But in this tiny White Deer academy, they had really encountered such a difficult issue. If such a situation was passed back to the Azure Phoenix academy, then they would be laughed at by countless people, and this incident would be nailed upon the humiliation pole.

“We can only give it a try. I feel that this person is extremely considerate of the two female white Deer students in the North path. Why don't the four of us, focus all our offensive energy in this canyon path and bait that person out to decide victory there and then.” Du Sha abruptly stood up, his face filled with a murderous intent.

After a slight hesitation, the three people all nodded their heads in agreement.

They had a desperate and ridiculous sensation that they were people attempting everything in a crisis, like a patient turning to any doctor at all when critically ill. They pretended the dead horse was alive and treated it as such<sup>2</sup>.

-----

- 1. It's from a Chinese poem. 李白的《侠客行》** ↵
- 2. Chinese idiom, doing everything in a desperate situation.** ↵

## Chapter 082 – The Blood Pool Of The Dragon’s Den

---

### 【Abyss whirlpool】

It was the most dangerous area in such a level of [Boundary canyon battlefield] and was also the most terrifying place in the entire battlefield. This was the place with the highest risk.

Ye Qingyu followed the flow of the Quicksand river in order to reach this place.

This wide and expansive river, roiled turbulently and swept up countless sand. It was an extremely magnificent sight.

And as the river finally came to its end, there were dozens of gigantic whirlpools rapidly rotating. From far away, the large yellow river was like the enormous and hideous mouth of a yellow dragon. The head of this dragon was buried under the roiling vortexes, entering into the mysterious ground below. The floating water vapour above these whirlpools were like clouds, enigmatic and frightening.

“According to the information within the booklet, at the end of the [Quicksand river] there lives a dragon.”

Ye Qingyu once again brought up the information within the booklet, reminding himself constantly of this fact. Finally, he did not hesitate anymore. Jumping and diving downwards, he went into the terrifying vortex. A giant tearing force was instantly upon his body, as if he was being torn apart by numerous ancient beasts, enough to rip anyone to

shreds in a split second.

Ye Qingyu activated his inner yuan to its fullest. Only then, was he able to barely withstand such a pressure.

In the time of a breath, he had gone down several hundred metres.

When ten breaths had passed---

“It should be around this time.”

Ye Qingyu loudly cried, the Inexorable spear in his hands shooting out.

The power of the [Banner of Heaven and Earth] broke apart the layer of water in the Northern direction. And nearly at the same time, the other half of the Inexorable spear also pierced out, the cold light of the spear tearing through the water and causing a vacuum to be formed within the endless waters. The [Fierce dragon pierce], part of the four moves of the golden armoured king, had been completed.

The power of these consecutive techniques blossomed.

Ye Qingyu's body flew out, breaking apart the water layer of the vortex.

In an instant, he travelled over a thousand metres.

Then, he came out from the endless waters.

Ye Qingyu discovered that he was standing in front of a giant cave on a cliff.

Turning his head backwards to look, he could see that a hundred metres away, accompanied with the sound of the roaring waters, was a silver-yellow waterfall a thousand metres wide falling from the sky into the endless void below. The scene shook him to his core. The waterfall was as if it came from thin air, and disappeared into the endless space like a river flowing through the vast and boundless void of space.

The location that Ye Qingyu was currently in was at the entrance of a cave on a cliff, a hundred metres away from this awe inspiring waterfall.

The whistling astral wind, came from deep within the cave.

Within the astral wave, there was a faint smell of blood. If one was not careful and deeply breathed in such an air, it was enough to make one dizzy as if they had ingested poison or as if they were completely submerged in sticky blood.

“It seems like this is the dragon’s den.”

Ye Qingyu understood this in a split second.

That’s right, he had come here to slay a dragon.

A dragon, was a terrifying existence.

According to the information Ye Qingyu was able to gather in the various public libraries, in the wild and desolate wastelands that had been reclaimed in the Heaven Wasteland domain, the ancient life form known as the 'dragon' had not yet been discovered. And at the same time, within the other domains, it was rumoured that the dragon race had nearly gone extinct, with thousands of years gone past without a single sighting.

The existence of a dragon was a pronoun for power and terror. The Dragon race formed the three great golden races along with the Divine race and the Devil race. Slaying a dragon was only a beautiful legend. It was impossible for it to happen.

But within the [Boundary canyon battlefield], everything was created by the laws of the runes and formation. It was said that the Formation Emperor Luoso had once done battle with these divine dragons, and was able to understand their power and bloodline. Using the power of runes and formations, to be able to create a rune dragon, was not something impossible for him. According to the information contained within the booklet, at the very end of the [Quicksand river] beneath the swirling whirlpools, was a dragon's den.

And within the dragon's den, there was the existence of a rune dragon.

Although it was not a true dragon, but if he was really able to kill such an existence, not only would he receive an astronomical quantity of yuan qi as reward but there would also be inconceivable benefits and advantages.

The mysterious writer of the booklet, pointed out that very few people knew of this secret. This was due to the fact that the location of the dragon's den was extremely hidden. Furthermore many people had the notion that jumping into the [Abyss whirlpool] would cause a true death to occur. So many years had passed, yet very little people would enter deeply within to investigate the secrets of the dragon's den. The writer of the booklet had advised Ye Qingyu to venture into the dragon's den, perhaps he would be able to harvest an unexpected prize.

At least from the present, the things recorded down within the booklet was correct so far.

Ye Qingyu had truly found the entrance to the dragon's den.

“Perhaps what is waiting for me, is a horrendous and difficult battle. Therefore...”

After considering for a moment, Ye Qingyu retrieved a drop of the [Blood of the yuan qi giant], and stored it within his mouth making preparations so that at any time so he would be able to restore his inner yuan. Then he activated his inner yuan to its fullest, a dazzling brightness shining in his eyes. His gaze pierced through the darkness, able to clearly discern anything within ten metres of him. Both hands grasping the Inexorable spear, he entered step by step into the dragon's den.

Inside the cavern, the path was extremely craggy and rugged.

On the way, shattered rocks was everywhere below his feet.

Ye Qingyu squatted down to carefully investigate.

“This is.....it seems like it is the vestiges left behind by the friction of the abdomen of some kind of organism as it walked.”

He discovered, that the exterior of these rocks was extremely smooth, as if it had been polished by something like the surface of a mirror. There was even a small quantity of powder upon it that glowed faintly in the dark. And between these pieces of shattered rocks, were the white bones of the dead dispersed between. Faintly discernible, there were also white phosphorous will-o-wisp in the air, like stars in the pitch black night, fluctuating up and down along with the drift of the air.

As he went even deeper, the bloody smell and poisonous air was even more concentrated.

In the cavern, the scattered white bones had become more and more. They were all the disseminated remains of unknown creatures.

There were some skeletons that had been preserved completely, and one was able to tell the terror and struggle in them before they had died. But in the end they were not able to evade the scythe of the dead death god. Some skeletons had already died for who knows how many years, and was as translucent and smooth as jade, but when Ye Qingyu only lightly touched it, it immediately crumbled into dust. With a bang, it smashed into pieces and scattered everywhere, greenish black smoke dispersing in the air.....

As he went even deeper, the scattered skeletons became piles of mountains.

On the ground, there was already not a path. Everywhere step that Ye Qingyu took, was done by stepping on the piles of bone.

Ka-Cha. Ka-Cha.

The sounds of the white bones snapping, in this deathly silent cavern seemed incomparably abrupt and horrifying.

“Some of these skeletons, when they were alive must have been extremely powerful. Although their flesh body has decayed, but after so many years the skeletons of these corpses are still as tough and rigid as steel...En, the majority of these bones seems to be from the demon race and is not humanoid.” Ye Qingyu carefully maintained his caution, and investigated slowly at the same time. “If my guess is not wrong, then these lifeforms should be captured here and eaten as food by the dragon within this cavern.”

As if ascending a snow mountain, he stepped on the snowy white skeletons. Constantly climbing, he was surrounded by the flicker of the will-o-wisps.

The space within the cavern, turned more and more expansive.

Suddenly, Ye Qingyu's figure quivered, as if realising something.

“That's not right. Within the [Boundary canyon battlefield], every living organism is constructed using runes and formation. After dying for a while, the corpses will transform back into the laws that govern this

realm and disappear from this world. But then why would there be so many skeletons, so many living things here? Could it be that these are not existences that belong to the [Boundary canyon battlefield], so therefore it will remain here even after it has died?”

Realising this, Ye Qingyu's figure shivered with cold.

Could it be really as the rumour said? Dying here, did it represent a true death?

Ye Qingyu suddenly realised that the secrets within this [Boundary canyon battlefield] were not something that even the White Deer teachers specialising in studying this realm knew fully. It even far exceeded the information he had read from the booklet. Everything was not as simple as what it seemed on the surface.

But since things had developed to such a stage, he had no path of retreat.

According to the information in the booklet, only after slaying the dragon could you truly leave.

Ye Qingyu walked step by step forward.

He climbed to the top of the mountain of bones.

The sight in front of him suddenly cleared, and a corridor of white bones appeared in front of him.

The passage was constructed from an unknown gigantic skeleton, every bone being tens of metres wide, like pillars of stone. The path below him, was also constructed from bones throughout the entire skeleton. Perhaps it was just a mistaken sensation, but beneath the bones, Ye Qingyu could seem to hear blood surging, like that of a gigantic red ocean.

This passageway of bones extended over a thousand metres.

The space of the dragon's den had finally reached its end.

A colossal pool of blood, appeared in Ye Qingyu's eyes.

The steaming blood like boiling water, gurgled and bubbled.

Scarlet red mist enveloped this entire space, the scene bizarre and terrifying. The floor and walls of this room were also constructed from bones and these bones were as translucent and as smooth as jade. The entire pool of blood was around six metres by ten metres, with an unknown depth. The red blood completely crammed the pit of white bones, and there was constantly blood red mists steaming up...

Ye Qingyu examined his surroundings.

“Eh? Why is it like this? Where is the dragon?”

The last space of this cavern was extremely expansive, but apart from a single boiling blood red pool, there was no hint of an existence of a

dragon ---there was not even a single dragon scale to be seen. This large space was made from the white bones, and everywhere will-o-wisps-were floating, brightening the entire space. Everything could be clearly observed.

Not to mention the dragon, there was not even a hint of any dragon's egg or a dragon scale.

Could it be that he had come to the wrong location?

Or the dragon had gone out hunting?

Ye Qingyu carefully approached the blood pool.

A scorching hot heat, emitted from within the blood pool.

After observing again, and confirming there were no signs of any danger, Ye Qingyu gradually reached the edges of the pool of blood. Then, using the already crippled Inexorable spear, he slowly stabbed it deep under the pool of blood. After swirling it around, no signs of any abnormality appeared.

When he retrieved the body of the spear, the blood stain on the spear was translucent. Drop by drop, it fell to the ground of white bones below.

“What kind of blood is this? Why it is boiling and steaming?”

He slowly crouched down, wanting to examine this drop of blood in

detail.

But at this time, something he did not expect, happened. The scarlet red drop of blood lying on the blood, as if it was alive, gradually moved along the ground like a freely moving blood snake. Without any obstacles or blockages, it once again returned to the pool of blood.

“Could it be that the blood is alive?”

Ye Qingyu was astounded.

And when he turned his head towards the inexorable spear, his shock was even greater.

Because the spear that had been deeply plunged to investigate the pool of blood, had undergone a change — Who knows when, from an inky black the spear had transformed scarlet red, without any shred of any impurities in the colour. Like a divine blood jade, it issued a faint radiance, tinted with a dream like colour.

The pool of blood had changed the inexorable spear?

Just what kind of existence was the blood pool?

And in the time Ye Qingyu was pondering, a faint fragrance wafted without any signs from the pool of blood. This slightly sweet fragrance, was as if it was made from the combination of various Spirit herbs. With Ye Qingyu's strength and caution, without any signs or warning, this scent entered straight into his nostrils. Only then, did he realise what

had happened.

“Not good.....”

A spell of dizziness and faintness came over Ye Qingyu. Silent cursing in his heart, his head fell below his feet. With a splash, him along with the two parts of the inexorable spear, entered at the same time into this mysterious and steaming pool of blood, causing a metre tall splash of blood.

## Chapter 083 – A Dog?

---

The feeling he felt at this moment, was as if his entire body was thrown in scorching hot molten lava.

Such a degree of heat burned every inch of his body. As if there were countless tiny fire insects that were piercing through his body, drilling with their utmost to enter into his muscles. First it was the layer of skin, then it was his muscles and finally it was his bones. Within his meridians, it was as if ten thousand steel needles the thickness of a bull's hair were travelling through. A type of pain, a thousand times, ten thousand times more painful than execution by tiny cuts, came like a flood, completely enveloping Ye Qingyu.

Ye Qingyu had a mistaken feeling —

At this instant, it was as if he was about to be dissolved in this pool of blood, becoming part of this body of water.

The previous fragrance that had entered into his body, had a terrifying and mysterious power. It completely froze Ye Qingyu's body so he that he lost his ability to resist. Even moving a finger was something extremely difficult for him. At this moment, demon king Ye was like being confined by a body imprisonment talisman. An unending and terrifying pain travelling throughout his body, but he still managed to retain consciousness.

“Pain...this is too painful, aaaaaa....”

He opened his mouth to loudly scream.

But the moment he opened his mouth, endless blood water crazily entered into his body. Following his throat and esophagus, it madly entered inside his body. It was as if he had swallowed a boiling mouthful of lava and his internal organs was currently being burned by a blazing and destructive fire.

At this instant, Ye Qingyu was sure, that death had already fallen upon him.

This pool of blood had a demonic property. It wanted to destroy everything.

In the face of this treacherous pool of blood, Ye Qingyu's tough and sturdy body along with his inner yuan at the second Spirit spring stage, could not even withstand a single strike. As if a strand of grass had been thrown into molten lava, it would be destroyed and turned into smoke in a mere moment.

But, when Ye Qingyu felt his life was about to end, an abnormality happened.

As if an existence that was in deep slumber had been disturbed, it sleepily issued a furious roar. And afterwards, a mysterious power suddenly activated from the depths of Ye Qingyu's mind. This power was like the arrival of the monarch, unmatched and unstoppable. Like a spring, it spread throughout his entire body, instantly dispelling the horrible burning power of the pool...

Every pain that he felt in this instant, completely disappeared.

Ye Qingyu was taken aback, then was madly delighted.

He was saved?

But after this joy had passed, he very quickly discovered there was still no way that he could move his body.

His body seemed to have turned into a piece of rock. Slowly sinking down into the depths of the blood pool, his back touched the hard surface of bone pit feeling the rough sensation of contact. But what was strange was that although he was completely submerged in the blood pool his breathing was completely normal, as if the blood pool contained a sufficient concentration of air. During the time that he was breathing , there was a indescribable feeling of comfort and relaxation.

“This shocking power...it came too suddenly, just where did it came from?”

Even though his body could not move, Ye Qingyu’s mind was thinking rapidly.

He was extremely clear that if not for this sudden change, and the appearance of this shocking energy, he would have been completely dissolved by the pool of blood. This kind of energy, just where did it originate from?

Could it be...it came from the bronze book?

That was a possibility.

But Ye Qingyu could faintly sense, that this kind of energy had already appeared several times before he had even obtained the bronze book, so it was not too likely.

After thinking for a long while, he still could not reach any conclusions.

His body was still and as stiff as a piece of ice or rock, not being able to move in the slightest. It was as if he had really transformed into stone.

“Just what is happening to me, I came to slay the dragon but I did not even manage to find a whisker of the dragon. Now I have turned into a drowned corpse...” Ye Qingyu could neither laugh or cry. This could not carry on. The situation outside was urgent and desperately needed him. Song Xiaojun and the others were in the midst of battle.

And at the time Ye Qingyu was racking his brains for a solution, another change occurred.

The clear and refreshing energy in his body, as if it had been completely expended, suddenly shrunk. It disappeared.

The burning and scorching power of the blood pool, slowly repossessed Ye Qingyu's body.

The blazing pain like that of being bitten alive by ten thousand insects,

returned and attacked with a vengeance in a split second.

“Shit, what is happening? Am I about to die again?”

Ye Qingyu was extremely shocked.

The acute pain only lasted for approximately for ten breaths of time, but it seemed to extend like an endless era. Just when Ye Qingyu felt that he would absolutely dissolve into the pool, the refreshing power that had disappeared, unbelievably appeared again. It spread throughout his body, immediately halting the burning pain and returning to the previous feeling of incomparable comfort.

Then, the refreshing power gradually disappeared.

The blood water once again entered into his body again, madly burning.

Ten breaths later, the refreshing appeared again...

And disappeared...

And appeared...

Disappearing again...

It continued in such a cycle.

Without end or rest.

The refreshing power was like the prank of a naughty child, or if it was intentionally doing battle with the power of this blood pool. Sometimes appearing, sometimes disappearing, it was as if it followed some unwritten laws, like the ebbing and receding of the tides, surging and fading. These two different kinds of energy, alternately occupied Ye Qingyu's body, making Ye Qingyu feel as if he was being rotated between Heaven and Hell.

Ye Qingyu could only passively accept this. There was nothing he could.

Time passed by second after second, in such a situation.

Ye Qingyu gradually entered into a strange state, where light and cold alternated, his consciousness forgetting everything. Time and space had lost its meaning. He forgot everything, forgetting his surrounding, forgetting himself. His entire person was in a state of blurred primal chaos.

This seemed like it lasted for a very long time, but also seemed as if it only happened for a short blink of time.

An unknown time later, Ye Qingyu suddenly quivered abruptly, awakening.

He subconsciously opened his eyes, both his hands touching the floor and sitting up.

“This...I can move?”

After a stunned moment, Ye Qingyu suddenly realised. He looked under him, and was dazed yet again.

Just what had happened?

Was I not...being submerged in the pool of blood? Then where did the ...pool of blood go?

Had everything finally ended?

Ye Qingyu dumbly stared at the surrounding bone walls that was as smooth as jade, and below his bottom was also the smooth bones that was as polished as a mirror. The breath he breathed in was bitingly cold, and his position was within a sunken pit of bone – if he did not guess wrong, then it was the place where the pool of blood contained.

But at this time, the blood water was completely gone.

The scorching and blazing power had disappeared without a trace, not even leaving behind a drop of blood.

It was as if the previous encounter, was only a bizarre dream.

After a short while, with a thoughtful expression, Ye Qingyu slowly stood up.

Within his body, was a surging enormous strength.

He attempted to move his body, and could hear a series a pops like beans exploding, that came unceasingly from within his body. His bones vibrated, muscles unfolding the joints and his bone in his body constantly rubbing against each other. It was as if he was a machine that had stopped functioning for hundreds of years, being activated for the first time. He was currently being broken in.

It was an experience that he had never felt before.

Ye Qingyu could faintly sense, that within his body, there was something extra.

But if he carefully examined, he conversely could not sense anything.

He lightly jumped.

Out of the bone pit.

“I really am still within the dragon’s den. It’s just that the previous pool of blood, has completely dried up, without even a single drop remaining.” A baffled look was on Ye Qingyu’s face. Such a large pool of blood, even though using an inter dimensional bottle would not be able to completely contain such a body of liquid. Just where did it go?

The events that had just occurred, was incomparably peculiar.

He carefully examined the space around the dragon's den, but there was not any other discovery.

There was no signs of the existence of the dragon like it was an abandoned tomb

If he had not seen with his own eyes that pool of blood, he would have only thought this place was a strange location layered with bones.

Ye Qingyu did his utmost to remember what had happened, but within his memories there was a completely blank segment. This was namely when he was in his mindless state. He absolutely could not remember anything that had occurred during this time. He did not know where the blood water went, and at this time he could not be sure how long he had tarried here.....

“Fine, lets just first leave here.”

Ye Qingyu had the intention to depart.

After all, the battle occurring in the [Boundary canyon battlefield] had not yet ended and the so called dragon's den, did not contain any treasures, divine medicines, divine herbs or rare materials. It was completely desolate of rewards. Continuing to stay here did not have any meaning whatsoever. Perhaps the dragon had gone out to play, who knows when this fellow would return.....

In short, Ye Qingyu felt his choice to come here to slay the dragon, was

a wrong decision.

And at the time when Ye Qingyu was turning to leave, suddenly --

“Huchi Huchi<sup>1</sup>.....”

A short but peculiar breathing came from behind him.

Ye Qingyu's body froze, then slowly and incredibly turned his head around.

A snowy white cute little creature, was squatting next to his leg. It was only about the size of a palm, doing its utmost to lift its head. Its large glistening eyes was staring at him in happiness, his long pink tongue stretching out, his tail swaying delightedly. Seeing that Ye Qingyu had turned around, this little fellow excitedly shook his head, and strived to place his little head upon Ye Qingyu's leg intimately...

Ye Qingyu was so scared that he jumped ten metres away in an instant.

This was...a ....a puppy?

A puppy?

Ye Qingyu could not believe his eyes.

This was something that was absolutely impossible.

He had just previously examined and observed in detail every inch of this space. There was absolutely nothing here. Then why did, in the blink of an eye, a little puppy appear?

Just where had it come from?

Ye Qingyu was stupefied.

After observing carefully, it really was just a snowy white puppy.

This little fellow did not have any impurities of any other colour in its fur, as if it was just a snowball. His glistening large eyes were clear, as if it was a pair of jewels that were shining with radiance. The little infantile teeth of the puppy were snowy white, and when he opened his mouth, you were able to see his pink little tongue.....From head to toe, it emitted an aura of adorableness.

There was nothing strange about a little puppy.

But to suddenly appear in such a place, it was really too peculiar.

Far more than peculiar, it was bizarre.

“Huchi Huchi.....” Seeing Ye Qingyu jumping away, the little fellow panicked. It crawled and rolled towards Ye Qingyu, his actions extremely intimate. Like a little child, it came stumbling towards him, its tongue stretching out with a flattering grin, giving Ye Qingyu a completely

harmless look.

Ye Qingyu did not dare to be too careless.

“What has really happened? I’ve evidently searched through this space entirely, without discovering anything...”Ye Qingyu was baffled. And at this time, a bolt of lightning flashed through his mind. He suddenly realised, that when he had searched through this space, he did not search the sunken in bone pit that used to hold the blood water.

Could it be...

That this little fellow, really came from the pool of blood?

-----

1. Sound of panting ↵

## Chapter 084 – Four Versus Four

---

Could it be that this little puppy had really jumped out from the bone pit that he had passed over in his inspection?

Ye Qingyu could only form such a conclusion.

He avoided the little white fellow with an unknown background and undetermined danger. Jumping once again into the bone pit, he carefully investigated.

But there was nothing to be discovered.

“Huchi Huchi...Wu Wu?” The little fellow crawled towards the edges of the bone pit, curiosity in his eyes. He shook its head and his chubby little tail constantly wagged, repeatedly expressing goodwill towards Ye Qingyu. The enthusiasm and intimacy reflected in his clear eyes was enough to make the heart of anyone melt.

Ye Qingyu tentatively extended his hand.

The little fellow spun around in a circle a few times, then unhesitatingly rushed at Ye Qingyu, as if he was a little snowball that was being rolled down a slope.

As he slid downwards into the bone pit, the little fellow jumped and landed onto Ye Qingyu's palm.

“Huchi Huchi, Wu Wu Wu!” The little fellow’s chubby little head constantly rubbed against Ye Qingyu’s palm. His mouth constantly emitted panting sounds, nodding his head and wagging his tail, a perfect picture of a someone out to please.

“Interesting.” Ye Qingyu examined the little dog meticulously.

“Eh? It seems like it really is a little puppy...But, it seems to have suffered an injury...It doesn’t have any forelimbs? No, it’s only because the forelimbs are too small...this...could it be because he is malnourished and grew up unhealthily?” After examining it for a while, he was shocked to discover some peculiar aspects.

This little fellow that looked like a snow ball had some strange attributes.

His head was larger than a normal dog by a fair margin, possessing over a third of his entire body. From the outer appearance, he was foolish looking but adorable at the same time. His forelimbs seemed to have been injured before, with the limbs being small and short. Evidently, it had grown in a wrong way. But it was hidden under the white fur, and could not be discovered unless one looked carefully. It’s hind limbs was evidently much stronger, supporting its entire weight.

From his entire body, the torso occupied another third of the total body. And the third of the body left, was taken up by a beautiful large tail that was constantly wagging behind his chubby little bottom.

Apart from these little peculiarities, this little fellow seemed exactly the same as the other dogs.

At this time, Ye Qingyu could not be sure whether this creature really was a dog.

Could it be some kind of rare life form?

Perhaps a divine beast or a spirit beast?

Ye Qingyu thought for a while, then laughed at himself. He shook his head.

How could it be possible that a divine beast looked like this? That was simply too unlikely.

“Huchi Huchi...Wu Wu.” The little fellow continued to intimately rub himself on Ye Qingyu’s arm.

Ye Qingyu did not know why but seeing this little fellow doing its utmost to please him, a feeling of intimacy could not help but be born within Ye Qingyu. It was obviously their first meeting, but he had the sensation that he had already raised it for an extremely long time, as if it was part of his family.

He still had questions in his heart, but after hesitating back and forth, Ye Qingyu ultimately decided to bring the little fellow along with him.

From the little fellow’s body, he could not sense the slightest hint of energy fluctuation. He should not pose a threat at all.

Appearing so mysteriously here, perhaps the little dog had some relation to the pool of blood. If he kept the puppy beside him, perhaps he could discover something in the future.

Furthermore, Ye Qingyu had a vague premonition, that everything that happened within the dragon's den today was definitely not as simple as it seemed. Perhaps it would have an extremely significant impact on him in the future, but at the current point in time, he did not discover what this effect would be. And it seemed like this little snowball would be one of the important clues to finding out.

“Huchi Hucchi!”

Like he had sensed Ye Qingyu's acceptance, the little fellow began to pant excitedly.

After receiving Ye Qingyu's approval, excited noises emitted from his mouth. He followed along Ye Qingyu's arm, and clumsily climbed onto Ye Qingyu's shoulder. His little pink tongue constantly licked Ye Qingyu's ear and his furry little head incessantly rubbed against Ye Qingyu's face.

“Haha, this little fellow...” Ye Qingyu began laughing.

This little fellow unexpectedly understood human nature surprisingly well, or as if their hearts were connected, he instantly understood Ye Qingyu's feelings.

“Since its like this, than I'll temporarily carry you along. Hehe, lets first

think of a name for you.” Ye Qingyu jumped out of the bone pit, and headed towards the outside. After a short consideration, he said laughingly: “Since your head is so large, than I shall call you Big Head from now on. Haha, this is concise and comprehensive. Strange creature, how about it?”

“Huchi Huchi...Wu Wu!” The little fellow did not know how to speak, but still remained hopping up and down in enthusiasm.

“Haha, that means you agree to your name, Big Head.”

Huchi Huchi, Wu Wu!”

“Fine, Big Head it is.”

“Huchi Huchi...Wu Wu!”

“Good Big Head!”

“Huchi Huchi...Wu Wu!”

A man and a dog, conversing in such a manner followed along the white bone path leading towards the exit of the dragon’s den. Their voices in such a pitch black and large environment resounded clearly and amusingly. Ye Qingyu’s mood instantly took a turn for the better, unwittingly letting out sounds of laughter.

But very quickly demon king Ye became worried.

According to the information written in the booklet, only after slaying the dragon would the passageway to exit this place appear. By following along this passage way, you were able to exit the dragon's den. But from the very start he had not discovered a dragon but only fostered a big headed dog by mistake. Then how would he be able to escape from the surging vortex of water? He definitely could not exit by following the method he had used to enter. With Ye Qingyu's current level of strength, wanting to go against the flow of the waterfall along with the suppressive laws of the [Boundary canyon battlefield] was something impossible for him to achieve.

A short while later.

Ye Qingyu discovered that his worries was completely unfounded.

Because at an unknown time, the waterfall that seemed to appear from nowhere and seemed to originate from the imposing and magnificent stars, had disappeared. He walked to the exit of the dragon's den and emerged from the inky darkness. The surging water vapour had gone, and the roaring thunder of the waterfall had also disappeared. He could only see the wall of the cliff extending upwards, and faintly he could see a bright glow thousands of metres above him.

“What has happened?”

Ye Qingyu felt he had encountered all the bizarre things in his life today all at once.

But since the waterfall formed from the [Quicksand river] had

disappeared, and he could see a light above him, did it mean that as long as he climbed and followed this wall upwards he would have a chance of leaving?

Considering this, Ye Qingyu decided to give climbing upwards a try.

“Big Head, pay attention. You must grip onto me tightly.” Ye Qingyu patted the big headed dog.

“Huchi?” The little fellow hesitated, question marks filling his eyes.

The next instant, Ye Qingyu had already chosen the direction and activated his inner yuan. Like a large bird, his figure soared upwards, jumping up tens of metres in a split second. His hand grabbed a jutting out rock, and using this to leverage his power, he continued soaring and climbing along the stone wall of the cliff.

“Wu Wu Wu...Huchi Huchi!”

Big Head was slightly dazed, not understanding in the beginning. But as Ye Qingyu soared upwards for the third time, he instantly understood. Looking at the pitch black darkness of the endless abyss below, he was so scared that every hair on his body stood up. His mouth bit tightly onto Ye Qingyu's ear and the chubby little tail stood straight up. His little hind legs was constantly kicking, his whole body shivering.

“Hahaha...” Ye Qingyu was in mid air, but he could not help but laugh loudly.

This big headed dog, was really too funny and amusing.

.....

.....

[Boundary canyon battlefield].

Northern canyon road.

Within the battlefield, the shouts of fighting reverberated throughout the skies.

Qin Wushuang had a serious expression as he regarded the four opponents that was approaching. He could not help but secretly cry with bitterness in his heart.

Fear had already coloured Xia Houwu's face.

Both of them two had never thought that before they could enact on their plan, they would encounter such a large problem. Both of them left the North East and the North West road to regroup with Song Xiaojun and Song Qingluo. They originally wanted to consolidate their strength and completely reinforce one of the battlefields to push through. This way, with Ye Qingyu's coordination, they would really be able to defeat the Azure Phoenix academy once and for all.

From their originally hopeless situation to the current events, even an

idiot could sense that their opportunity had arrived.

If they were able to win just once, then the five people who won this round, would immediately become the heroes of the White Deer academy. All sorts of resources and techniques, would become slanted towards them. Even if Xia Houwu and Qin Wushuang did not care about the resources of the academy, but the fame from defeating the Azure Phoenix academies held great attraction for them.

So therefore in such a situation, not long ago, Qin Wushuang had cast aside his status and discussed matters with the Song Sisters. The four people were now gathered together in the Northern battlefield.

From the point of view of Song Qingluo and Song Xiaojun, this was a decent enough proposal.

After all, four people gathered together definitely resulted in them being slightly safer. And if they were all in one spot, Ye Qingyu did not need to rush left and right at all times. He only needed to hide in the background and correctly respond. This was a comparatively perfect plan.

It was only that Ye Qingyu appeared like a deity and faded like a ghost. There was no way to discuss such a strategy with him.

But from Qin Wushuang's perspective, Ye Qingyu had taken the most care in protecting the northern canyon road of the Song sisters. This was one of the reason he had chosen the Northern path as the focal to gather together. This was definitely the road that was going to receive the largest amount of Ye Qingyu's assistance.

In truth, the impact was extremely large on Qin Wushuang after seeing Ye Qingyu's kill Xu Ge.

He was utterly bitter, not admitting to the fact that he was in any way worse than Ye Qingyu.

But after experiencing so many things Qin Wushuang must acknowledge that a commoner scum like Ye Qingyu was definitely luckier than him. At least the key to this round's victory, was tied around Ye Qingyu. Especially after seeing the chance to truly win once and for all. After long consideration, Qin Wushuang suddenly felt that it was not such a big deal to lower his head once. Even if he was accused of relying on Ye Qingyu to triumph by the lowly commoners — as long as they won, Qin Wushuang had the confidence he could claim more of the credit for this victory.

But they would never have thought that not long after the four had gathered together, the Azure Phoenix students would appear.

And that four of them would appear at the same time.

Their original plan was that it would be four versus one or versus two. Immediately became four versus four.

The situation had suddenly worsened.

Why was it like this?

After a slight daze, Qin Wushuang and Xia Houwu was shocked.

If it could be said that Qin Wushuang still had a will to battle and was still calculating how it was possible to win this grand competition, then the Xia Houwu who had already died two times, had long become a bird frightened at the mere twang of a bow<sup>1</sup>. He only wished to fish in troubled water<sup>2</sup>, and wanted to survive onwards through such a method. He absolutely did not want to risk his life. Therefore, when he abruptly saw the appearance of the four students, his first thought was to quickly flee.

Opposite them.

Lin Nuo, Zheng Kai, Du Sha and Ding Liyou were also shocked.

What was happening?

They had gathered together in the Northern path for one reason: to ambush and kill Ye Qingyu, risking their lives for the last time. They would never have thought, that the White Deer academy had also gathered in such a location...Was this the scheme of the White Deer students? If it was really so, did this not represent that the demon king like figure, was also lurking nearby?

Fight?

Or flee?

At this instant, both sides was in a state of hesistation.

-----

1. someone who frights easily due to past experiences ↵
2. take advantage of a crisis for personal gain ↵

## Chapter 085 – Blood Red Gaze

---

And at this time, Xia Houwu gave a signal to Qin Wushuang next to him. As if suddenly mustering his determination, he loudly roared: “Why are you still hesitating, charge them....”

Saying this, the long blade in his hand struck out. He was the one who rushed to make the first move.

Xiu !

A cold blade, sliced through the air towards Lin Nuo.

Strong winds violently formed.

Such an action instantly broke the peculiar stand off within the battlefield.

The figure of Lin Nuo flashed like a streak of lightning, instantly evading the strike of the blade. A bright fierce light suddenly gleamed from within his eyes, coldly laughing and gritting his teeth: “Haha, you really think our Azure Phoenix academy is easily pushed around? What are you still waiting for, act!”

The battle exploded in an instant.

Zheng Kai, Ding Liyou and Du Sha all of them with gloomy

expressions, at this instant struck out.

They really had been imprinted with fear after being killed by Ye Qingyu so many times over.

But this did not mean that when facing Qin Wushuang and the others they would retreat.

Because the Azure Phoenix students believed that the elders of their own academy was able to see everything that was occurring through the formation projection at this moment. They could not retreat. Since events had developed to such a stage, taking even one step backwards signified humiliation and cowardice.

“Act together and defeat the enemy.”

Qin Wushuang loudly roared, and the Great Zhou sword in his hands began vibrating. A pale silver formation light emitted from within the sword, as if a silver dragon was entwined around the sword. Yuan qi trembled violently in the radius of the sword. He was currently the strongest person out of the four students of White Deer academy. Through this display, it seemed he really had momentum and the aura of an expert.

“Haha...” Zheng Kai laughed and the enormous staff in his hand swept out, directly receiving Qin Wushuang’s attack.

The two of them instantly fought against each other.

Sand and dust spread throughout the air.

Xia Houwu had exchanged a single strike with Lin Nuo and was instantly placed in a disadvantage.

He was sent flying, landing near the location of the Song sisters.

Lin Nuo came to finish the kill with a cold smile.

“Save me...” Xia Houwu screamed, begging for aid from the Song sisters.

The field of battle instantly extended to the location of the Song sisters.

Song Qingluo also knew that this battle was unavoidable. Patting Song Xiaojun’s shoulder and warning her to take care, her dainty hand grasped thin air causing the Spirit weapon [Qingluo] to instantly appear in her hand. The emerald green sprout, in an instant transformed into a python like vine. Like green lightning, it shot out and began its attack.

The green vines turned from one into two, two into three, three into ten within the air. Like an anaconda, it madly strangled towards the enemy.

The little loli Song Xiaojun also fully activated her inner yuan, a fire shield appearing all around her. In the quickest time possible, she came to assist Song Qingluo. Two fireballs shot through the air, bringing with it a blazing power that sealed off Lin Nuo’s path of evasion.

Lin Nuo's speed increased, mirage after mirage appearing in the air. He changed his target, forgoing finishing off Xia Houwu and struck towards the Song sisters.

Xia Houwu fell to the ground, staggering. He did not immediately return to the fighting, but gradually retreated to the edges of the battle. His eyes flicked throughout the battle, closely observing the movements of the two left over members of the Azure Phoenix academy....

Ding Liyou and Du Sha, both of them did not immediately join this battle.

After being ambushed by Ye Qingyu so many times, a shadow had been cast in their hearts. They regarded their surroundings cautiously, deathly afraid that demon king Ye would appear like the previous times. That he would descend from the heavens like a divine soldier, and suddenly slaughter all of them. Such a scene was completely like an nightmare for them. In the eyes of Ding Liyou, Du Sha and the other Azure Phoenix students, the greatest worry was Ye Qingyu. The other white Deer students, they completely did not care about at all.

As long as they confirmed that Ye Qingyu was not near, they were confident that they could completely slaughter the four White Deer students in an instant...

“As long as I flee to under the protector statue, then I will be completely safe. However, if those two does not act, then I won't be able to escape at all...” Xia Houwu's eyes flickered. Seeing that Ding Liyou and Du Sha had no intentions of joining the fray, he became slightly panicked— Especially the Du Sha who had already killed Xia Houwu twice over created an enormous psychological pressure in Xia Houwu's heart. He

was absolutely clear, that within this five hundred metre radius, there was no way he could escape from Du Sha's attack.

Unless Du Sha was occupied by someone else.

Slowly, a scheme began to form in Xia Houwu's heart.

Deciding, and giving Qin Wushuang a signal, he grabbed his long blade in his hand. Pretending that he was about to rush in and help, he slowly approached the battle between the Song sisters and Lin Nuo. His long blade sliced apart the air, pretending to strike....

“Careful ! ”

Panting heavily, Xia Houwu neared Song Qingluo and neared her.

Song Qingluo was about to say something, when the expression on Xia Houwu's face completely transformed. A sinister smile appeared in his face, and he fiercely struck out with his palm, slapping it against Song Qingluo's back. She could not react in time, and was sent flying by this strike, her figure heading straight for the Du Sha and Ding Liyou standing far away.....

“What are you doing?” Song Xiaojun was dumbfounded.

In a split second, this innocent little loli could not comprehend what was going on.

“I’m not so stupid as to accompany you guys to die. I have already died twice, I know how the pain of death feels like...” Xia Houwu laughed maliciously, and his palm struck out again, inner yuan spitting out. Without the slightest trace of mercy, he sent the dainty little body of the little loli in mid air. Accompanied by the explosion of yuan qi, the figure of Song Xiaojun was sent flying towards the direction of Lin Nuo.

Such an unexpected change was like an arm suddenly transforming into something else.

Everyone on the battlefield was flabbergasted.

Both Song Xiaojun and Song Qingluo had never expected such a betrayal to occur.

Neither did Lin Nuo, Du Sha and Ding Liyou expect this.

Facing the Song Qingluo that was sent sailing in their direction, Du Sha and Ding Liyou acted instinctively. Under the flickering cold light of their blades, razor sharp yuan qi sliced apart the air. The Song Qingluo that was in mid air could not evade in the slightest. Even if her [Qingluo] was activated to its fullest, at the very most she could do was directly face this attack. In an instant, their blades were dyed red. Her delicate body was directly struck. Not even a single cry of anguish could be emitted before she transformed into a bloody mist that ruptured throughout the air

Song Qingluo was also injured at the same time.

She was also sent flying, and landed upon Lin Nuo's fist blade. Her abdomen was stabbed through.

Blood jetted out.

At the same time, Xia Houwu performed the act that he had been planning.

Like a stray dog, he ran for his life towards the protector statue of their side. Even if Lin Nuo and the others were in a high state of caution, they had not planned for such a shocking turn of events. Before they could recover their composure, Xia Houwu had already taken advantage of this lull. He was like a out of control feral dog, running for his life to enter into the defensive radius of the protector statue. He was temporarily in a safe location...

The second person to react, was Qin Wushuang.

At the same time Xia Houwu acted, Qin Wushuang as if they had made a tacit agreement long ago, also roared loudly. Exploding with the strongest possible power he could muster, the Great Zhou sword struck fiercely on the enormous staff. Using the rebounding force of this strike, Qin Wushuang floated backwards hundreds of metres in the direction of the protector statue. Like two thrown balls, both of them entered into the defensive radius of the protector statue.

The two noble students, in an instant had escaped from their dire straits.

At this moment, the battlefield was deathly silent.

After a short time of shock, Lin Nuo and the others looked at each other. On their face were expression of incredulity.

This...what had just happened?

As a great academy that ranked in the upper ranks of the ten great academies, the students from Azure Phoenix had participated in great competitions like the [Boundary canyon battlefield before]. Therefore previously, they had met many different kinds of opponents and encountered different kinds of strategies. But they had never ever witnessed such a evident and open betrayal of their comrades.

The students of Azure Phoenix was well aware that everything that happened here would be seen by the higher ups of the academy.

The White Deer student far off in the distance performed such a betrayal without the slightest trace of fear. After he jumped under the protective statue, he suddenly smiled joyously, as if he had really won. Could this fellow really be a mentally disabled retard?

He really dared to perform such a betrayal that was equal to murder?

Did he really not fear, that after the end of the great competition, he would receive the punishment of the White Deer academy?

Or did this mean that the White Deer academy would not punish such an action?

Lin Nuo retrieved his fist blade, retreating with a peculiar expression on his face. He knew the power of his own fist blade clearly; after being injured to such an extent, this little girl would be unable to turn around a desperate situation. She could not live for much longer.

Pu !

A stream of blood from the injury suffered in Song Xiaojun's abdomen spurting out like a fountain.

The little loli's figure, trembled slightly.

As if she was using all her energy to remain upright, she did not fall over. With great difficulty, her petite body remained standing and shaking, as if she was a willow branch in the face of a tempest. Bright red blood dyed the earth around her. In her pure and beautiful eyes, her expression displayed bewilderment and anger. She looked at the Xia Houwu who had jumped away towards the protector statue. She asked: "You...why?"

Xia Houwu only smiled maliciously.

"You...brother Qingyu, will not let you get away."

As she said this name, the eyes of the little loli brightened with an inexplicable glimmer.

But Xia Houwu only casually smiled: “Before the end of this grand competition, he won’t know anything that happened here. And after the grand competition is over, everything is too late...Hehe, furthermore, you died at the hands of the enemies, and it wasn’t I that kill you...you are only an illegitimate child and Song Qingluo is only a daughter of the president of a commerce company. It doesn’t matter if you die or not, and besides, this isn’t a real death anyway.”

“You...bad person...scoundrel...” A pale blood colour, slowly appeared and spread throughout the little loli’s originally clear eyes. Her petite little body began quivering, as if this was the reaction from her heavy injury and losing too much blood or as if within a body, a strange transformation was currently undergoing. She cursed with the what the little loli thought was the most grave and severe profanity: “You’re despicable!”

“Despicable?” Xia Houwu coldly smiled. “Fine, insult me all you want. You’re about to die, I won’t hold grudges with a dead person.”

“I...” The figure of the little loli, began trembling even more violently.

Rage.

Hatred.

Rage and hatred that she had never experienced before, completely submerged the little loli’s heart.

She was possessed by a desire she could barely control. She wanted in

this instant to rush over and make this despicable scoundrel pay, tearing him into pieces. Bit by bit, she wanted to ground him into waste. In her heart there was something occurring. As if there was a scorching flame that was blazing, as if there was something that was about to explode in her chest.

Then, the change came.

Her eyes, was completely covered with a scarlet red.

It was a concentrated blood red.

A colour that represented destruction and death.

Her eyes did not have either whites or pupils. From her eyes, two rays of red light shone as if the Death God had come to reap apart all life. Such a terrifying aura emitted from her red eyes. As if there was a monster that was being slowly awakened from within the body of the little loli. Even through such a slight release of this destructive power, it could not help but make one shiver in fear.

## Chapter 086 – I Have Something More Important To Do

---

“What kind of power is this ?”

“This is impossible ? That girl.....”

Lin Nuo and the others felt a trepidation, like they were in the midst of a disaster.

In this instant, the red light that was radiating with a thick stench of death and destruction made the four Azure Phoenix students felt the terror of being utterly annihilated. This was a too terrifying, too powerful strength. It fundamentally did not belong on the body of a human. Even if this power had not truly broken out, but even under the pressure of of this tiny glimpse was enough to make Lin Nuo and the others feel like they were wheat in the face of a hurricane, able to be destroyed at any second.

In the battlefield of the Northern canyon road, it was as if a God or a Devil had descended.

This terrifying aura extended outwards in all directions. The clouds in the sky were moving, the sunlight dimming at this moment. Even the demon rune soldiers and the rune soldiers without intelligence could also feel unease, stopping their endless battle.

Qin Wushang was dumbfounded.

The smile on Xia Houwu's face froze.

Song Xiaojun really did exhibit an exceptional talent within the first year students and her improvement was extremely rapid. Otherwise, she would not have been able to enter into the list of ten nor receive the opportunity to enter the [Boundary canyon battlefield]. But even if the little loli was stronger still, she absolutely should not be this powerful.....

Xia Houwu could faintly feel the turn of events was not favourable for him.

As if he had done something wrong, as if he had enraged an existence that should not be incited.

At this time--

“You deserve to die!”

The little loli seemed as if she had turned into a monster. Her voice was an icy metallic friction. It did not contain any hint of human emotion, as if it originated from the depths of hell and was not like that clear and crisp voice she normally possessed. Like the sinister smile of the Death God, there was an indescribable terror.

Along with this voice, a scarlet red light came from within the little loli's body.

“This is bad!”

Xia Houwu was in a complete panic, doing his utmost to avoid this ray of light.

Boom !

The scarlet red ray of light rubbed past Xia Houwu's body, hitting the protector statue of the White Deer academy. A huge explosion. The structure collapsed with rocks falling and dust rising to the air. The protector statue had been destroyed!

At the same time.

The little loli was devoured by this scarlet red light, finally dissolving into dust and smoke.

Such an explosive power was not something she could control. Adding to the heavy injuries she had sustained, the little loli had no way of controlling this power. Her body transformed into dust and smoke with her spirit flying to the skies and soaring towards the resurrection altar.

The dust covered ashen face of Xia Houwu, crawled out from the rubble.

There were many injuries on his body, and his face was deathly pale in fright. But ultimately he was able to avoid the killing stroke of the red light, and avoid a catastrophe.

Qin Wushuang's body was also covered in dust, the skin near his eyebrows sliced apart by the rubble. His scarlet red blood slowly dripped down, his expression bewildered. He could faintly sense that on the body of Song Xiaojun, a transformation had occurred that was definitely not simple. What followed after would be a surging wave --an immense wave that was sufficient to plunge the entire Deer mountain range into a perilous situation.

Opposite them.

“Destroying the protector statue with one strike?”

“Only a power of the Bitter Sea stage or above is able to do this...”

“What kind of secret is hidden within this little girl's body?”

Lin Nuo, Du Sha, Zheng Kai and Ding Liyou all looked at each other. They were all stunned by the abnormal change that they witnessed on Song Xiaojun's body.

And at this time, a voice spoke into their ears all at once: “What are you hesitating for, the protector statue has already collapsed. Quickly act and kill the two remaining students of the White Deer academy and crush them in one go...this is our last chance.”

Lin Nuo quivered, able to recognise the owner of this voice.

Xiu!

He became a shadow, the first person to strike out.

Du Sha and Ding Liyou quickly followed.

Indeed, such a turn of events was surprising but this was absolutely the opportune moment for the Azure Phoenix academy. As long as they were able to kill Xia Houwu and Qin Wushuang and charged forward in one go, before the four could resurrect, they could absolutely rush to the headquarters of the White Deer academy. At that time, even if Ye Qingyu appeared, with his power alone, he would not be able to defeat the five people of Azure Phoenix academy...victory was firmly in their grasp!

Opposite.

Under the collapsed protector statue.

Through just one glance, Qin Wushuang was able to understand the intentions of the Azure Phoenix students. His expression paled greatly.

But before he could react at all, a sudden bolt of black lightning, without any noise or signs struck down from the heavens. Like a falling black star, he could only discern a black light flashing through the air before a black coloured spear appeared on the ground.

Xiu!

The sharp piercing explosive like sound was finally heard.

The heart of Lin Nuo leading the charge, suddenly madly shuddered.

He had come.

That demon king....the strongest person of the White Deer academy, had arrived.

They had already experienced such a technique several times before.

As expected in the next second, as if a mountain from far away had collapsed, or as if a hurricane blew past, or as if a surging river had flooded, a black figure approached from far away. Wrapped in light and electricity, in the time of a spark with speed like that of light, before Lin Nuo's brain could perform any sort of reaction, he had already neared.

The same technique.

Lin Nuo had already imagined such a technique being performed in his mind countless times. Lin Nuo thought he already deeply understood the essence and secrets behind such a technique. He had been confident that the next time he met Ye Qingyu, he would definitely be able to avoid such a deadly strike. But when the moment finally arrived, this confidence was destroyed in their first contact.

Without a question, Lin Nuo was sent flying again.

Such a terrifying impact, made him feel as if every bone his body had broken. He felt a sweetness in the back of his throat, and he opened his mouth, blood spurting. His vision grew dark and he lost his consciousness, only able to sense that his body was currently flying backwards....

What was also sent flying, was the Ding Liyou and Du Sha following behind him.

The two before they reached the ground, also madly vomited blood then landed on the surface. Not able to move in the slightest, they had temporarily lost their ability to do battle.

“Heavens.....this.....how could it be?” Zheng Kai stood stunned a hundred metres away, terror freezing his footsteps. “It shouldn’t be like this...even Ding Liyou and Du Sha has been hurt...this is outside the previous effective range of that technique, could it be that the strength of this demon king has risen yet again?”

Zheng Kai and his comrades had once theorised about the effective range of Ye Qingyu’s battle technique. After fighting with Ye Qingyu several times previously, they had concluded that the impact of his attack should only be within a metre around the target. But this time, the Ding Liyou and Du Sha that was over a metre away from Lin Nuo had also been sent flying?

He had gotten stronger.

Zheng Kai did not have the courage to continue the attack.

He staggered backwards.

Ye Qingyu also did not keep on pressing forward.

He turned around, walking step by step towards the collapsed protector statue.

“Tell me, what has happened?” The voice of Ye Qingyu was like the metallic clash of swords. There was a killing aura emitting from him that pierced chillingly into the depths of their bones.

Xia Houwu could sense something was wrong. He looked at the Qin Wushuang beside him, and a sly light flashed by in his eyes. Slowly retreating, he pretended to be surprised and stammered authentically: “It’s too great that you’ve come...we’ve been ambushed...Xiaojun and Qingluo has both died, we were not their opponents...”

“A trash such as you, deserves to die. You deserve to die ten thousand times over.”

Ye Qingyu pressed ever closer in large and furious strides.

His gaze was like a blade, a murderous intent completely covering his body. A rich bloody odour enveloped his body.

“You...just what do you want to do?” Xia Houwu said in panic, his face flushed. “It has nothing to do with me...it’s the people of Azure Phoenix... we weren’t their match, we couldn’t save Song Qingluo or Song Xiaojun... don’t blame me, just what do you want. If you want to blame someone,

blame yourself for not appearing...”

“Shut your mouth!” Ye Qingyu loudly roared, his voice like the fierce clap of thunder.

“A scum like yourself, just exactly what you have done, you should be very clear. Do you think that I don’t know? Fearing for your own death, attacking your own comrades...being despicable to such an extent, you are not fit to be a human...Even if I am breaking the rules of this battlefield, I will definitely kill you.” Ye Qingyu dragged his spear along the ground as he walked towards Xia Houwu, the heavy body of the spear causing sparks to be created from this friction.

His eyebrows was raised and an unsuppressed fire burned within his eyes.

“You...” Xia Houwu was in a state of extreme shock.

How could Ye Qingyu know what had occurred?

“We should prioritise on the overall situation first. Such a thing...” Qin Wushuang frowned, opening his mouth to say something.

“You are also not a good person.... just go die together.” Ye Qingyu coldly gave him a glance, his voice like it came from the depths of hell. The spear that was originally erected on the ground, shot out by itself with a whistle, transforming into a ray of black light and striking towards Qin Wushuang.

“You.....”Qin Wushuang was both shocked and angry. The [Great Zhou sword] in his hand activated, blocking the sudden attack of the spear.

Boom!

The weapons clashed.

The [Great Zhou sword] flew out from his hands, disappearing in a point of light high up in the air.

The skin between Qin Wushuang’s thumb and forefinger had broken apart. He was absolutely not able to block this spear strike, his long sword being sent flying. The inexorable spear stabbed through his body, bringing with it an enormous force. Nearly in an instant, it destroyed his body. His entire figure turning into bones and a bloody mist that dispersed throughout the air. There was nothing he could say before he died.

A spirit transformed into light, flying towards the headquarters.

Ye Qingyu’s gaze was like a blade, regarding at Xia Houwu.

Pu-Tong.

Xia Houwu’s knees instantly softened, kneeling on the floor.

Without knowing why, when he saw Ye Qingyu’s gaze, the triumph in his heart disappeared like smoke in thin air. He was fundamentally not

able to speak, the subterfuge and artifice that he had prepared beforehand fading. Even his words of begging was stuck in his throat. He did not even have the courage to speak anymore.

What kind of person Ye Qingyu was, Xia Houwu knew perfectly well.

Demon king Ye was in the midst of rage. There was completely no degree of sentiment or face that he would give to him.

“Dying like this is really too convenient for you!” Ye Qingyu’s wrists moved, the cold light of the spear blossomed. Blood jetted from Xia Houwu’s body, his heart instantly being shattered into pieces. Before his spirit had left his body, he could indistinctly hear Ye Qingyu’s voice, as if he was passing judgement on him: “Such an action will absolutely not end with just this. When we return to the real world, I will make you pay the true price for what you have done.”

Boom!

His inner yuan exploded.

Xia Houwu’s body cracked and fractured turning into a blood vapour.

Not even fifteen minutes had passed, and the White Deer academy that originally held the absolute advantage, out of five people, four of them had already returned towards the resurrection altar. There was only Ye Qingyu left.

And at the same time, on the side of the Azure Phoenix academy , there

were still four people present.

Apart from Lin Nuo who had experienced the full power of Ye Qingyu's [Banner of Heaven and Earth] and [Fierce dragon pierce] directly and died straight away, the rest could still battle. Both Ding Liyou and Du Sha had received significant injuries in this skirmish but they could already stand up. They possessed the ability to fight.

But facing the Ye Qingyu who was like a god of slaughter, Zheng Kai and the others died not dare rush forwards.

Ye Qingyu's thick black hair was flying, the long spear behind his body, the point of the spear pointing towards the heavens.

A black robe and a black spear.

The black hair was like a blazing black flame.

"Xu Ge, come out. I know you're there." Ye Qingyu took a deep breath, looking towards a forest far off. "I know you're there. Right now, everyone of you come at once and end this competition as quickly as possible. As of this instant, I have something more important to do."

## Chapter 087 – The Final Move

---

Before he had finished his sentence.

A silhouette came from deep within the forest far away. Every step he took he travelled over ten metres. In the blink of an eye, he had arrived at the battlefield. His white robe like jade, a handsome appearance with a confident and at ease manner. This figure was namely the person known as the number one peerless genius of the Azure Phoenix academy, Xu Ge.

He was the person that had secretly spoken to Lin Nuo and the others, urging them to act.

“Who would have thought I would be discovered by you.” Xu Ge had a serious expression as he spoke. “Your strength compared to what you were like at the start of the grand competition has grown by so much. If my guess is not wrong, you have always been rushing through the desolate wilderness. Could it be that within the wild there is some sort of secret hidden inside?”

Ye Qingyu’s left palm slowly stretched out, his palm becoming a fierce claw shape. The crippled long spear stabbed into the ground far off in the distance was grabbed through the air, sailing towards Ye Qingyu.

With both spears in his hands, his aura explosively increased.

“My mood is not good right now. I don’t want to speak useless words. Quickly attack.” Both spears in Ye Qingyu’s hands formed a cross behind him. Step by step, he pressed closer. “If you won’t attack, then I will.”

The spear in his hand shot out.

[Banner of Heaven and Earth] of the golden armoured king.

Xiu!

Nearly at the same instant it left Ye Qingyu's hand, the spear was nailed beside Ding Liyou.

The large impact, caused the originally heavily injured Azure Phoenix student to be killed in an instant.

This was an extremely peculiar scene. His circumstances was the same as Lin Nuo. Ding Liyou had already fought against Ye Qingyu previously so he was familiar with his battle techniques. He should have long prepared himself to defend against Ye Qingyu's technique, [Banner of Heaven and Earth]. But the moment the long spear like a war banner descended, he had evidently reacted and evaded but could still not escape death.

“Kill! [Fierce dragon pierce]!”

The spear in Ye Qingyu's hand stabbed out.

This time, Xu Ge was able to clearly see the entire process of Ye Qingyu performing the technique.

As the long spear stabbed towards the spear nailed towards the ground, a energy like that of a law attracted Ye Qingyu's figure towards it. As if he was a dragon soaring out, he brought with him a force like that of a mountain or tsunami, like light or electricity, holding an irresistible aura that rammed towards you.

The speed was fast.

Fast to the extreme.

The moment the spear in Ye Qingyu hands stabbed out, the lightning like impact had already arrived.

Xu Ge's mind quickly reacted, using nearly the absolutely fastest reaction and strongest energy to resist and evade. But even he was affected by this lightning like power, his body could not help but be thrown in the air by this strike. At the moment he was knocked in mid air, Xu Ge was able to feel a peculiar sensation — his inner yuan had consolidated, and he had no way to activate it making him unable to effectively resist.

In the corner of Xu Ge's eyes, he was able to see Zheng Kai and Du Sha, also been struck in the same moment.

“I understand.....”Within Xu Ge's mind, a bolt of lightning struck. “So the secret behind Ye Qingyu's battle technique, is that one doesn't have to be touched by his body to be sent flying. It hits only if you are within a certain area...this is approximately 20 feet around?”

His mind quickly calculated the range and power of his opponents technique.

And at the same instant.

The Du Sha who had been heavily injured previously spurted a jet of blood from his mouth, his body completely breaking apart. Under the impact of this lightning strike, he had fallen in an instant. His spirit transformed into a ray of light and headed in towards the headquarters of the Azure Phoenix academy.

The Zheng Kai famed for his physical prowess only received light injuries and was knocked tens of metres back.

This was because Ye Qingyu's principal target was not him.

Striking out with the force of thunder, he had slaughtered Du Sha and Ding Liyou in a split second. Ye Qingyu's aim had already been half achieved: to reduce the number of his opponents as best as he could to prevent them from recovering and surrounding. Only through doing this, could the scales of victory begin tipping towards the White Deer academy.

“Then let me try out another move...[Protection of Heaven and Earth]!”

Ye Qingyu loudly roared.

He suddenly stamped on the Earth, cracking and fracturing the ground. Then a surge of dense golden radiance, bringing with it a divine aura,

erupted from his body. Like layers and layers of light with Ye Qingyu's body at its centre, this golden light radiated in all directions.

Xu Ge and Zheng Kai was in a huge daze.

A new battle technique?

In their previous battles, Ye Qingyu had never utilised such a move before.

The dense golden light radiated enveloped his entire body, as if this world had placed a divine protection upon Ye Qingyu.

A viscous power, along with this divine golden light snaked out. In a short amount of time, it had already completely covered everywhere within a hundred feet. The air was as if it had thickened. Both Xu Ge and Zheng Kai could feel an invisible rope tying them down, making their movements becoming more sluggish. It was as if their bodies was being pressed down by an ancient mountain, even taking a step became difficult...

The Zheng Kai next to Xu Ge was the worst off.

He struggled to take even a single step, madly resisting.

Under the immense power of the great Earth, ripple like patterns twisted. It was as if both his legs were submerged in a viscous substance and around the body of Zheng Kai there was a pale yellow light flickering madly. This was a sign that his inner yuan were being activated to its

absolute fullest. He wanted to break free from this sudden constraint.

But Ye Qingyu would not give him this opportunity.

Xiu.

A star in the night sky.

A cold star first arrived, then it was the spear following behind it like a dragon.

The light of the spear pierced through space, a torrential rainstorm pouring down. Zheng Kai screamed crazily, both hands gripping his Spirit weapon the enormous staff, his inner yuan functioning to its fullest capacity. His staff swung out in a blossoms of swings, making it seem as if a bronze shield had appeared in front of him.

Bang!Bang!Bang!Bang !

The metallic clashes that was enough to deafen one's ear sounded unendingly.

Clusters of sparks exploded, hysterically sputtering.

The shadows of the spear was singing.

The swing of the staff became confused.

Such an apocalyptic clash did not last longer than three breaths of time, before it suddenly stopped.

The light of the sparks, disappeared like smoke in thin air.

“Fast...an extremely fast spear! I...admit I’ve lost, I’m not...your match...Pok...Pu!”

Zheng Kai stood at his original position, his hands still gripping onto his staff that was mottled with marks. His fingers quivered slightly. With great difficulty after saying such a sentence, his body that seemed unharmed at first glance, suddenly jetted out streams of blood. His entire figure was like a blooming fountain of blood. His body fell to the ground, his spirit shooting out and heading towards the headquarters of the Azure Phoenix academy.

Even though the rotation of the staff was rapid but it still could not withstand the light of the spear that covered the sky.

The Zheng Kai that specialised in physical strength, in a short amount of time, his staff techniques was completely broken by Ye Qingyu using an even greater power. This brute strength had disrupted his moves, and the spear stabs pierced into his body like that of a torrential storm. In a moment of time, his body had endured hundred of wounds and the life force within his body had broken.

At this time, the protective golden energy gradually dispersed.

And at the same moment, Xu Ge who had finally broken through the restraint of the [Protection of Heaven and Earth]. Without saying a word, he rushed forward like lightning, his speed not less in anyway compared to that of Lin Nuo. His silhouette left mirage after mirage in the air. Within his left and right palm, each had a bright silver crescent blade, cutting through the smoke in the sky to attack.

The power of the [Moon seal] was mustered to its extreme without any sounds or sign.

Ye Qingyu turned around, his long spear blocking.

Ding!Ding!Ding!Ding!

A clusters of close impact noises emitted.

Crescent moon after crescent moon struck against each other, forming a strange trajectory within the air. Like a complex silver net, it constantly struck against the inexorable spear and continuously pervaded the air around Ye Qingyu. The crescent blades sliced past without any signals, ripping apart Ye Qingyu's black robe.

This was the true power of the moon seal.

Every time the moon blade clashed, after a slight vibration, one blade would turn into two. After following an incredible arc in the air, it returned again, constantly striking out. As if it possessed life, in the blink of an eye, Ye Qingyu was already completely surrounded by hundred of moon blades. Surging back and forth, like a stormy assassination,

impossible to defend against effectively.

“This is the true strength of my [Moon seal]!” Xu Ge inner yuan was completely activated, his entire figure being covered in a silver inner yuan light. His voice was like the cold essence of the moon : “Last time I was not familiar with your technique and suffered a heavy loss. This time, I have seen through the mysteries behind your battle technique. Using the same technique on me twice is useless. Ye Qingyu, you’ve lost already.”

Ye Qingyu held his mouth shut without saying anything.

He was examining in detail the moon blades shooting out in strange arcs, but was immediately disappointed.

Because each and every trajectory of each moon blade, was like the curve of an antelope’s horn, with no signs of any flaws or distinct patterns. Especially as they constantly clashed against each other, these trajectories would constantly change. One would turn into two, two into three, three into tens of thousands. Like the full moon, this technique emitted a radiance that would make people feel dizzy and faint when they looked into it. There was a peculiar charm like power.

“The [Moon seal] really is a high class battle technique. The mysteries of it are limitless, its not something that can be broken apart in a short time...if this continues on, when Xu Ge’s [moon seal] has been fully performed, then the momentum of my spear will break for sure. At that time, I will not be able to avoid tens of thousands of these moon blades.”

Ye Qingyu clearly understood.

“This is my true strength. Ye Qingyu, your White Deer academy, will still lose.” Xu Ge loudly roared, the inner yuan in his body vibrating, and an immense pressure slowly emitted, as if he was carrying the aura of the Moon god.

“That might not be.”

Ye Qingyu shouted, the swings of his spears changing.

“If I can’t break apart his technique, then I’ll just crush it using brute force!”

As he screamed, Ye Qingyu’s figure suddenly soared into the sky, as if a dragon gliding through the air. He did not care about defending anymore, allowing the thousands of moon blades to slice apart his body. As the spurts of blood flowed, there were countless wounds on Ye Qingyu in an instant. In this short amount of time, his body was completely torn apart by the moon formation and his body flew hundreds of metre high up in the air.

Such a height, completely defied the laws of the [Boundary canyon battlefield].

Xu Ge lifted his head to look, shock in his eyes: “What? How is this possible?”

“The fourth move of the golden armoured king — [Heaven rends and Earth destroys]!”

Within the atmosphere, the sound of Ye Qingyu's roar sounded. His silhouette suddenly swooped down accompanied by the rumble of the air. It brought with it the force of thunder and lightning, similar to a star falling from the furthest reaches of heavens. Within the reverberating blaze, there were burst after burst of dragon's roars. Rapid like lightning and thunder, it was as if it would destroy this entire world.

“What kind of technique is this?”

Xu Ge screamed.

The next instant, the Heavens collapsed and the Earth cracked.

Within the huge explosion, the earth shattered and fractured into a huge crater.

Under this indescribable immense force, the ground subsided but the Earth's crust ascended, striking into each other, forming a surrounding rock fragments that were tens of feet high. Like a newly created mountain range, this chaotic energy revolved all around, causing a strange forcefield to appear. If you were within this area, then your senses and thoughts would become disordered and deranged.

Xu Ge in this confusion, felt that is if the world had really been destroyed.

In a second, such a terrifying impact had made him spurt out blood from his mouth and nose, his limbs breaking apart. The inner yuan

within his body had gone crazy and chaotic, disordered and messy in his meridians. He could not muster his inner yuan to resist anymore, and the essence of the [Moon seal] was destroyed. The countless of moon blades in the air disappeared like thin smoke in the bright glare of the sun.

“I’ve...lost again!”

In his last glance, he was able to see Ye Qingyu covered in blood, standing amidst the smoke and dust. His figure was like a spear, and Xu Ge’s mind constantly returned to the image of this teenager breaking apart his moon formation through such a decisive act where he abandoned all defence. Xu Ge suddenly felt, that this was what a true practitioner should be. Perhaps the two times that he had lost to this student of White Deer academy was not simply because of the difference in battle techniques.

## Chapter 088 – He Wants To Murder Someone

---

Ascending heaven pavilion.

When the scene of Ye Qingyu, like a dragon soaring through the heavens, slaughtering the students of Azure Phoenix students appeared in the formation projection, the cheers that had been suppressed for a long time finally sounded. Everyone understood, that the death of Xu Ge, signified the complete defeat of the Azure Phoenix academy. Because at this time, only Xu Ge had a chance to resurrect. The other four people had already died three times, and had already been forcibly ejected from the [Boundary canyon battlefield].

And Ye Qingyu had already defeated Xu Ge in a one versus one direct battle, so even if Xu Ge was resurrected, he could no longer cause anymore waves.

A large number of second, third and even fourth year student representatives, also could not suppress their cheers and screams.

Even if they did not manage to obtain victory personally, but the honour and glory from winning one round belonged to the entire White Deer academy. And they were a part of the White Deer academy.

Bai Yuqing had a complicated expression on her face, but even she could not help but applaud.

She must admit, that this teenager called Ye Qingyu, had given her too much shock and astonishment. She must also acknowledge that her

previous evaluation was too hasty and she had misjudged this teenager. At the same time, the girl that was in the eyes of many male students of White Deer academy a goddess, began to become curious towards Ye Qingyu.

In the places where the formation projection did not show his figure, just what had occurred?

This youth that had originated from the commoners displayed a battle technique that was bursting with explosive power. It seemed extremely simple, but the strength was absolutely frightening...just where had he learned such a battle technique from?

From within the crowd, Jiang Xiaohan and Han Xiaofei exchanged a glance.

Both of them could see the other's shock and unease.

Especially at the moment when Ye Qingyu had performed his last technique. A violent and direct dive as if a dragon was descending, like a star was falling, simply nothing could match him. In a moment of time, he had completely changed the terrain, causing a miniature mountain range to appear. The two asked themselves this question: if it was me on the receiving end of such a strike, what chances of victory do I have?

The person that they had treated like a loach, that commoner student that they thought was impossible for him to rise to prominence ever again, caused them to be uneasy. It made them who regarded themselves as the favoured children of heaven to sense a huge threat.

The large majority of the teachers were also elated.

“Haha, that child is really the lucky star of our White Deer academy.”

“I haven’t accepted a disciple in over ten years. This Ye Qingyu, suits my taste very much. From now on, let me teach him personally, I’ll accept him as my disciple!” An elder with snowy white hair said laughingly.

“That can’t be, this Ye Qingyu is the perfect inheritor that I’ve bitterly searched for to learn my skills. I want to pass on [The will of Heaven sword style] to him. Old fellow, don’t fight with me over him...” Another elder with snowy white hair said with a glare.

“Hehe, Elder Liu, Elder Zhu, does that mean both of you have the intention to accept a disciple? Haha, but to tell you the truth, before Wen Wan had left the academy, he had personally given Ye Qingyu for me to take care of. Haha, then this Ye Qingyu could be counted as half my personal disciple, why don’t you guys stop trying to steal my fortune?” A middle aged teacher said with a beaming smile.

“No matter what, the academy from now on will heavily nourish this child.”

“Perhaps in the glorious battle of the ten academies a year later, this child will give us an even greater surprise.”

A large majority of the teachers had faint smiles on the faces, discussing the events joyously. Unexpectedly winning the fourth round

had given the entire White Deer academy a cardiac stimulant.

Of course, not everyone regarded Ye Qingyu with favourable intentions.

Some old elders that came from a noble background, emitted several snorts.

“Could it be that everyone has forgotten, before defeating the Azure Phoenix academy, Ye Qingyu personally killed two students of White Deer academy? This person cannot be tamed, with a traitorous bone in his body, and heavy murderous intent....” This noble elder shook his head with a cold laugh, “Such a person, is he really worth us heavily investing resources to nourish him? I fear this is equal to nurturing a tiger and inviting calamity!”

.....

.....

The practice grounds of the White Deer academy.

In front of the ranking stone mirror.

Vast crowds were present on every single practice grounds and had been long simmering. The excited people were like a bubbling current, with more and more people rushing to join.

“We won ? We’ve really won? ?”

“Ye Qingyu managed to save a desperate crisis.”

“This is absolutely all due to the effort of demon King Ye. Look at the change on the stone mirror. Haha, I can imagine what exactly has happened on the battlefield—both parties had a direct battle. Qin Wushaung, Xia Houwu, Song Qingluo and Song Xiaojun first died in battle, but demon king Ye fought against the crazy tide alone, turning around the situation. Hahaha, this is too satisfying.”

“Demon king Ye is really too strong, strong!”

“I completely can’t believe what my eyes are telling me.”

“Haha, let me see what that group of Azure Phoenix can still say. Hehe, lets go to the arena and rip the two banners that are erected there..”

“Eh? Where is the people of Azure Phoenix? When exactly did they slink away?”

The crowd was boiling with triumph.

The situation was filled with so much excitement and bustle that it was like a grand festival.

Especially the first year students. Everyone held their head high with pride and joy. Some people bragged, bringing up the fact that they had attended lessons with Ye Qingyu before. Some people told the story of Ye

Qingyu's shocking training speed when he was body refining and the powerful effects of this training. And some people were like story tellers, retelling the incident when Ye Qingyu had used a single punch to disperse the Azure Phoenix student in front of the library, exaggerating it and repeating the tale....

This was a common sense of public glory.

Ye Qingyu used his own strength and actions, to win the glory of the academy, therefore the students also managed to obtain glory. Ye Qingyu did not only obtain victory but he also won the heart felt respect and acceptance of the majority of the students.

Cheers and screams like that of the thunder's roar, sounded from every practice ground.

The news also spread out from the ranking stone mirror. The leaders of various interest groups and factions that had always been paying attention to the competition between the two academies in Deer city, also received such information.

The reaction of them differed.

But everyone at the first moment, thought of the prediction of the previous Dean?

Could it really be that a peerless genius would be born within Deer city?

Very quickly, the final result was announced on the stone mirror. The judgement of the [Boundary canyon battlefield] announced that the White Deer academy had obtained the final victory. From the little characters on the stone mirror, the Xu Ge who had just resurrected chose to directly surrender, and did not struggle till the bitter end.

It seemed like Xu Ge realised, that even if he was given another opportunity, there was no way he would be able to prevail against Ye Qingyu directly.

In the heart of the Azure Phoenix genius, a psychological shadow that he was inferior to Ye Qingyu had already been planted.

Within the White Deer academy, the cheers became even louder.

.....

.....

In Ascending heaven pavilion.

A heated debate was still in the midsts of discussion.

“Peh! You have the nerve to say such things. Then what about Xia Houwu attacking his own comrades, what about that?” Hearing the accusation of the noble elder, a short tempered teacher could not help but angrily shout.

“Xia Houwu will naturally receive the punishment he deserves. But Ye Qingyu should also pay the price for his actions.” The noble elder said neutrally. “Besides, Xia Houwu did not personally kill his comrades by his own hand. But this tyrannical Ye Qingyu, I think that his punishment should be even greater.”

“Sophistry ! ”

“Completely shameless”

“Everything has cause and effect ! ”

Various types of shouts resounded throughout the Ascending heaven pavilion.

In this time, the victory of the round did not seem that important anymore. Many teachers that came from a noble background, finally opened their mouths. After all, the seed of victory were already in their hands and many people subconsciously began scheming for the distribution of the rewards. Different factions also began plotting. Just what exactly did this victory represent in the ongoing battle between the commoners and the nobles?

“Enough, stop arguing.” The old dean finally spoke.

“Dean, Ye Qingyu slaughtered his own comrades, we must teach him a lesson otherwise...” This noble elder would still not let this matter go.

“Am I the Dean, or are you the Dean?” The tone of the Dean became

severe, and a light like the sheen of blade came from his eyes: “How I do things, could it be that I need you to teach me?”

This noble elder was dumbfounded. He shivered in his heart, quickly saying: “I don’t dare, I only wanted...”

But he could not speak on, his face turning red.

The people around him, also did not know what to say.

In their memories, this amiable and gentle Dean, had never raised his voice. This was his first time being so severe when he spoke. In this very long time period of time, this number one person of the White Deer academy had always treated things with one eye closed and one eye opened. There were many incidents in the academy that he simply did not manage, and in the end only had a casual smile when these were reported back to him. He had never lost his composure and become so enraged before.

The old Dean at this time, was like a fierce slumbering dragon suddenly opening his eyes. The inner yuan deep like a ravine began activating, vibrating and humming. The entire Ascending heaven pavilion seeming to be shaking. Everyone became silent, not daring to say anything more.

And at this time —

Xiu!Xiu!Xiu!Xiu!

Above the sculpture of the Formation Emperor Luoso, golden lights

flickered. Lines upon lines of runes began activating, and the five first year students that were transferred into the [Boundary canyon battlefield] were ejected out.

The eyes of everyone, all focused on the figures of these five people.

Especially Ye Qingyu.

He was the person that managed to turn a desperate situation around, and created a miracle. He received the attention of many.

Xia Houwu lowered his head and looked down at both of his hands. He was able to sense the greatly increased quantity of inner yuan in him, and could help but be excited.

This was the yuan qi rewards that would persist for ever through killing the demon rune soldiers in the battlefield.

Carefully calculating, he had slaughtered over a thousand demon rune soldiers. The reward that he managed to obtain was equal to him bitterly training for half a year in the real world. The inner yuan within his body was vibrating, showing signs that it was about to break through to the next stage.

A faint smile appeared on his face, and he was about to say something when he felt a blur in his vision...

Boom!

In an instant, Ye Qingyu appeared in front of him. His steel like fist moved, striking out directly in his face.

Half the face of Xia Houwu, visibly caved in through such a force. White teeth and scarlet red blood water jetted out, and the muscles on his face shivered like ripples. His entire person had gone dumb, like a massive axe chopping a tree, sent rolling and flying away!

WengWengWeng!

Xia Houwu could only feel that everything in his vision was rotating. A buzz was in his ears and golden stars flickered in his vision.

He was completely beaten to a daze by such a strike.

Everywhere, there were gasps of shock.

No one would have thought, that in the instant they departed from the [Boundary canyon battlefield], Ye Qingyu would attack. He used the most simple, most direct, and most violent way to indicate his perspective and stance.

After this punch, Ye Qingyu still did not stop.

Xiu!

The spear tore through space.

The cold light of the spear was like lightning, directly stabbing towards Xia Houwu's heart.

The intention to kill was evident.

He really would, in the midst of the Ascending heaven pavilion, in front of the elite of the students of every year, in front of the higher ups of the Academy, lift his spear and kill someone.

## Chapter 089 – Words Reverberating Throughout Ascending Heaven Pavillion

---

“Aaaah, save me...”

Xia Houwu finally reacted. Like a dog crawling backwards, he screamed like a pig squealing as he was being slaughtered.

From Ye Qingyu’s cold and imposing gaze like that of a blade, Xia Houwu was absolutely sure that he really was going to kill him.

If it was any other person, Xia Houwu would not have been afraid.

Because there were so many higher ups of the academies and different seniors of different years present. Killing him in such an open and evident fashion, was simply looking for their own death. Even an idiot would avoid shooting at the rat to refrain from breaking the vases. Normal people would have some apprehensions about killing someone so openly. But this was Ye Qingyu, a demon king like existence. When he went crazy he was willing to do anything and everything. If there was one person, that really dared to kill someone in this place, this person was definitely Ye Qingyu.

Xia Houwu scrambled backwards in terror. He could not care about the numbness in his face from the strike anymore, quickly crawling away to avoid the next attack.

“You dare!”

“Impudent!”

Several noble elders shouted loudly at the same time, acting out to block.

A terrifying yuan fluctuation, in a flash surged throughout the entire Ascending heaven pavilion.

Ye Qingyu held his spear across his chest, directly taking such a strike. His entire figure was sent soaring through the air by the impact. A trace of blood was evident in the corner of his lips, but even in mid air, he still cried loudly the spear in his hand flying out. As if it was a weapon that shot out from the siege bow to destroy cities, it streaked towards the terrified Xia Houwu retreating in terror.

“Aaa.....”

Xia Houwu screamed horrendously.

The long spear pierced through his left shoulder then continued flying out. With a boom, it nailed directly on a statue far off.

“Save me...Aaaaaaa, I’m about to die.....Save me!”

Xia Houwu began screeching like the wails of a ghost and the howls of a wolf, pain emitting from the very depths of his bone marrow. He felt as if death had really arrived. This place was different to the [Boundary

canyon battlefield]; to die here, represented a true death. There was no way of resurrecting.

“Outrageous, to dare to try to kill someone right in front of us!”

“This is truly unforgivable!”

“Too arrogant!”

The elders who were from the noble organisation, that had already expressed their dissatisfaction with Ye Qingyu, finally found their opportunity. Everyone of them was enraged and shouted to discipline Ye Qingyu, all of them righteously indignant. Especially the elder who led the pack, he was so angry that his figure was quivering.

“Do you see? Does everyone see? This child is vicious to what degree?” The leading noble elder pointed at Ye Qingyu, his face filled with rage. “In Ascending heaven pavilion, such a holy place, you dare attack and injure someone without the slightest trace of regret. Such a rebellious child, what’s the point of teaching him? I advise that we take away his position of White Deer student, and give him to me for severe treatment!”

“Junior brother Ye, you really have taken things too far...”

Jiang Xiaohan slowly walked beside Ye Qingyu, a perfect picture of someone trying to kind heartedly correct someone. She shook her head. “No matter what, we are all students of the White Deer academy. Even if junior brother Xia Houwu was wrong, this should be left for the elders of the academy to manage. Even you do not have the right to meddle with

an ordinary student. Not only is that exceeding your place and meddling in the teacher's affairs, your attack was far too serious!””

Ye Qingyu rotated his head fiercely, looking at Jiang Xiaohan.

Jiang Xiaohan originally wanted to still say something, but facing this cold and disdainful gaze, her heart shivered. The things she wanted to say, she could not speak it out.

Such a gaze, she had never ever seen in Ye Qingyu's eyes before.

This was a gaze that was for enemies, for people they loathed.

It was not the gaze of someone regarding their childhood friend.

Jiang Xiaohan thought that this teenager in front of her, no matter what the time, would be humble and flatter her.

But currently...

A shiver that came from her soul, made Jiang Xiaohan embarrassed and angry. She hesitated, then opened her mouth to say something again: “I only want the best for you, I ...”

“Shut your mouth.” Ye Qingyu coldly broke off her words. He said, word by word: “This has nothing to do with you. Scram!”

Jiang Xiaohan was as if she was struck by lightning.

She could not believe the words she had heard. Such a decisive and abhorrence in his tone, did it really come from the little boy that listened to her every word from when he was small? That little boy, that no matter what she did, would smile graciously at her? He really told her to scam?

At this time, the little loli Song Xiaojun that had recovered, walked over lightly. She pulled on Ye Qingyu's arm.

She was evidently scared by such a scene, but she still resolutely stood beside Ye Qingyu.

“Xia Houwu attacked me and sister Qingluo from behind in the battlefield.” Her little voice, clear and determined, reverberated throughout the entire Ascending heaven pavilion: “He was the person who was in the wrong. He's the bad person, you shouldn't punish senior brother Qingyu!”

After hesitating for a moment, Song Qingluo also took a step forward. “Regarding this situation, I can vouch for it. Xia Houwu feared death, and fled in the face of the enemies, causing us to nearly lose this round. If not for brother Qingyu....”

“Shut your mouth!”

The noble elder loudly roared, his voice like thunder. Yuan qi energy exploded from him, jolting the Song sisters backwards like a little boat in

front of a surging wave. Under such a terrifying yuan qi energy, the two girls had trouble even opening their mouths, they completely could not say anything more.

He waved his hand. “There’s nothing here that relates to the two of you. Move aside. The matters regarding Xia Houwu, I will naturally take care of. But what I need to manage right now, is Ye Qingyu this bastard who dares disrespect his teacher....”

“Hahahaha...” Ye Qingyu abruptly began laughing.

“Impudent. Rebellious student, what are you laughing at?” The noble elder shouted.

Ye Qingyu was like a blade making a judgement, his eyes icy cold. “I’m laughing at a old dog like yourself. Unable to distinguish between right and wrong, not understanding gratitude and grudges, using one’s position to bully others, distorting the truth deliberately. I don’t believe that you did not see the things that happened in the battlefield through the formation projection. What about it? To protect a scum like like Xia Houwu, you don’t even need your old face anymore? Really pitiful and lamentable, you have lived so long in vain, have you lived to turn into a dog? Such an old dog like yourself, relying on your age to do what you want, to be able to become an elder of White Deer academy, is really one of the legends of this world!”

Every word was clear and distinct, like a sword or a blade. It had the power to quiver one’s heart.

After finishing, Ye Qingyu did not take a step back in the slightest. His

pair of eyes was flickering with electricity, furiously glaring at the elder.

Such words resounded for a long time throughout the Ascending heaven pavilion.

Once these words were said, numerous people were dumbfounded.

He was only a tiny little student...how could he dare...to speak to an elder of the academy like this...he had gone mad!

Bai Yuqing lowered her head in shame.

Even she felt disdain for the shamelessness and biased stance of these noble elders. But such words, even she would not dare to speak it out in such a way.

“You.....you...you..” this noble elder face was filled with shock, so angry that his entire body was shaking.

He did not expect at all, that a student who in his eyes was a pig that he could slaughter at any time, really dared in front of so many people, to speak such words. In this moment in time, he was so angry that he could not formulate a word. After spluttering ‘you’ for a long period, finally killing intent appeared sinisterly on his face. “You are looking to die!”

Before he had finished.

His palm struck out

A saffron yellow enormous palm formed from yuan qi advanced crushingly towards Ye Qingyu.

This was the enraged strike of someone at the Bitter sea stage, possessing a terrifying aura. Once the palm struck out, the majority of the people within the Ascending heaven pavilion felt as if they were ants being thrown into the ocean. They could sense a suffocating pressure that made them unable to stand stably.

Ye Qingyu stood at the very front and bore the full brunt of this attack, engulfed by this gale.

He laughed madly, snapping but not bending. Contempt in his face, he would rather die than take a step back.

Seeing the humongous palm about to crush Ye Qingyu, at this time, the little loli Song Xiaojun being suppressed reacted. Extreme worry and panic appeared on her face. She wanted to struggle from the restraints of several of the noble elders, but was not able to do. Without realising, an abnormal change began to happen within her body. Her body suddenly began shaking, a shred of scarlet red air, began to leak. It was so tiny and minuscule that it could not be seen from her petite body ...

The Wang Yan who had not spoken all along, suddenly noticed something. Her figure flashed, instantly appearing beside the little loli.

Her palm light like a blade, slicing the back of the little loli's head...

The figure of the little loli quivered, but she did not stop shaking. In fact, a ray of scarlet red light, began growing from within her clear and bright eyes, taking a very strange shape...

Wang Yan's palm was bounced off.

Shock and worry appeared on Wang Yan's face. However, her hand did not hesitate in the slightest, striking at the back of the little loli's head again. This time, one could distinctly see the Wang Yan's palm was wrapped by a green aura. Very evidently, this was the sign that she had activated an extremely powerful yuan qi.

The little loli's figure only fell then, the scarlet red aura disappearing in the air. Slowly, she sank into the embrace of Wang Yan.

Song Qingluo was shocked and was about to say something, but Wang Yan shook her head slightly.

The other side.

As the noble elder's yuan qi giant palm was about to completely crush Ye Qingyu, the old Dean who had remained silent finally acted. Everyone only felt their vision blur, before the figure of the old Dean shockingly appeared in front of Ye Qingyu.

This old man's palm filled with wrinkles slowly stretched out, pushing lightly in the air.

There was no fluctuation or aura....

But this crushing giant yuan qi palm, like a sand statue within the wind, when it was less than one inch from the old Dean, disappeared!

“Pu...Pok!”

This noble elder’s figure quivered, opening his mouth and spurting out a mouthful of blood.

His entire body staggered backwards, his face instantly turning deathly pale. Within his eyes, it flickered with both rage and fear.

He had never thought, the old Dean who had always concealed his strength and bided his time, would act and protect Ye Qingyu at such a time.

What he did not imagine even more, was that the old Dean had not just simply protected Ye Qingyu. He had secretly punished himself—while it may seem that the old Dean had just resolved his attack, but this noble elder was clear, that a hidden force had emitted from the palm of the old Dean. Soundlessly and without any signs, it had entered into his body. Without three or four months of rest, such a wound could not recover!

“Enough, the things today shall end here.” The tone of the old Dean was icy and dominating, glaring at the noble elders. “Lin Weifeng, even if you don’t need your face, our White Deer academy needs our face. The things that happened here today, who’s wrong and who’s right, everyone knows clearly within their hearts. Don’t pester endlessly...” Saying to here, he looked at the other elders and teachers, his tone severe: “Recently a lot has been happening within the city. I hope that everyone

can fulfil their own duties and roles, and don't disrupt order, nor to see profit and forget morality. The affairs that has nothing to do with you, there is no need to care about it. Wanting to act for someone else and inciting trouble, the White Deer academy will not be responsible for it.”

## Chapter 090 – It Doesn't Matter

---

The hearts of the elders and teachers within the ascending heaven pavilion quivered together.

The old Dean today was evidently from normal. Within his words, there contained an obvious warning.

Pausing slightly, the old Dean spoke again: “From today onwards, Xia Houwu is no longer a student of White Deer academy. He is forever forbidden from entering the White Deer academy, and Qin Wushuang is to be confined for three months to reflect on his wrong doings. Even though Ye Qingyu has injured a fellow student and disrespected an elder, but the victory of this grand competition was all thanks to him. The merits and demerits offset each other, so he will take no further responsibility for his action....”

A commotion.

No one would have thought the final judgement of the old Dean would be such a result.

The old Dean who had always remained neutral and kept things in balance, this time clearly stood on Ye Qingyu's side.

“The upcoming fifth round of the battle between elites, will be conducted by Elder Zhou Yun. I have some matters so I will depart first.” Finishing speaking, the Old Dean turned and walked towards the exit of the Ascending heaven pavilion.

His ancient figure, quickly disappeared off into the distance.

Silence completely enveloped the Ascending heaven pavilion.

The people left here at this time, did not know what to say.

According to the previous agreement between Azure Phoenix and White Deer, after the first, second, third and fourth years had finished their battles, there would be one extra battle. They would pick the five students who had performed exceptionally and form a new team, to conduct the final battle —according to common sense, the reason why this fifth round was needed was in the case of the previous four rounds reaching a tie.

In the grand competition this time between the two academies, from the previous results, there was no longer a need for the fifth round to continue.

But many people still hoped to obtain the opportunities and rewards within the [Boundary canyon battlefield]. They still wished to participate onwards into the fifth round. Even if they were still absolutely crushed by the Azure Phoenix academy, at least they could in a set amount of time, obtain the rewards of the battlefield. Such a convenient benefit really could not be passed up.

Ye Qingyu had the most exceptional performance in the previous competition.

According to logic, he should possess the chance to continue to remain within the battlefield.

But Ye Qingyu did not want to enter anymore.

The things that he wanted to obtain, he had already managed to obtain.

In truth, he was very disappointed in White Deer academy. He did not want to interfere in the conflict between the two academies anymore, especially within the last round. From Ye Qingyu's point of view the performance of the Azure Phoenix students were far, far more deserving of admiration and praise than Xia Houwu and Qin Wushaung.

Ye Qingyu with the intention of leaving, slowly turned around.

His gaze, passed through the entire crowd. Suddenly realising something, his heart shuddered. There seemed to be one person missing from the gathering.

“Where's Xiaojun?” He looked towards Song Qingluo.

Very few people had seen that Wang Yan had attacked and knocked Song Xiaojun unconscious, bringing her away. At that time, Ye Qingyu was receiving the full brunt of the noble elder's attack, and was concentrating solely on this so he naturally did not perceive what had occurred.

Song Qingluo whispered a few words in Ye Qingyu's ears.

A confused expression appeared on Ye Qingyu's face.

What had happened?

Why would Wang Yan knock the little loli unconscious?

Ye Qingyu had a vague feeling, that could it be related to the scarlet red power exploding from the little loli's body?

He remembered the events in the [Boundary canyon battlefield] during in the last battle, when the little loli was betrayed by Xia Houwu. Under this stimulation, she exploded with a tyrannical power that was enough to make one shake in terror. At that time Ye Qingyu was able to observe this through the [Sentry guard], and was also greatly taken aback. But right then, he was too enraged by Xia Houwu's shameless action so did not pay too much thought to it.

But thinking back in detail, Ye Qingyu became slightly worried for the little loli.

But since Wang Yan had acted, it seemed like the situation would not be as serious as he thought. This head teacher of the first years was someone that Ye Qingyu respected very much. From demon king Ye's perspective, there was not many people worthy of his trust and respect in White Deer academy but Wang Yan was definitely one of them.

“Everyone, let's discuss the choice of participants for the last round.”

The head elder of the White Deer academy, Zhou Yun finally opened his mouth. He was also an elder with snowy white hair but a rosy complexion. He very rarely appeared in public, but had great contributions towards White Deer academy in the past. He possessed a prestigious status and had high reputation, otherwise the old Dean would not name him to be the person who would manage the following events after he had left.

Instantly, everyone began proposing different student representatives.

Zhou Yun smiled towards Ye Qingyu, and said extremely amiably: “Qingyu, your performance was exceptional. You absolutely have the right to enter the [Boundary canyon battlefield], do you wish to fight for the academy in this last round?”

Ye Qingyu shook his head.

As if Zhou Yun had long seen through Ye Qingyu’s intentions, he did not display any signs of shock. Nodding his head, “That is fine too. A child like you knows how to modestly decline. You’re a good child that wants to give this opportunity to other students. Since it is like this, then return and rest well.”

In his words, he made an excuse for Ye Qingyu.

It seems like this head elder, also admired Ye Qingyu very much.

But the words of elder Zhou Yun were not false; Ye Qingyu really was slightly tired and wanted to rest well, wanted to sleep. Of course, he was

still extremely concerned over the little loli's situation. He decided that straight after he would go and find Wang Yan and ask about her situation, and to find out everything. Ye Qingyu nodded his head slightly, about to turn and leave.

At this time ---

“Huchi Huchi....Wu Wu!”

A strange and peculiar sound, came from within Ye Qingyu's chest.

The furry head of Big Head poked out and exposed himself from the clothes on Ye Qingyu's chest. His glistening large eyes curiously examined every person present, then agilely snaked out from Ye Qingyu's embrace, landing on his shoulder and intimately rubbing his head against Ye Qingyu and licking his ear.

The gazes of everyone focused on this little thing.

A white and adorable little puppy?

Ye Qingyu really had brought such a little pet with him?

Some people could not help but giggle. No one had thought that demon king Ye that killed people so decisively would raise such a cute pet, could it be that even he had softness within his heart?

And some people eyes brightened, realising something.

The rage and anger in Ye Qingyu's heart slowly subsided. Seeing the silly Big Head incessantly pretending to be cute on his shoulder, after a slight fright he also realised something.

In general, regarding the life forms within the [Boundary canyon battlefield], there was no way it could be taken out. After the competitors were forcibly ejected from the battlefield, apart from the yuan qi rewards and some spoils of battle like [Blood of the Flame devil beast] and the [Blood of the yuan qi giant], there was no way to transport the living creatures away from that realm.

Previously when Ye Qingyu had brought along Big Head, he only felt that he could keep him beside him during the battlefield with no way of bringing Big Head out from the [Boundary canyon battlefield]. But right now, seeing the little fellow licking his ear in joy, Ye Qingyu finally realised that he had brought this little dog out of the battlefield.

This was in all of history, the first creature that was brought out from the [Boundary canyon battlefield]!

“I never thought that I would really manage to bring this little fellow out.” Ye Qingyu noticed the gazes of the people around him and the emotions behind these eyes: curiosity, shock, greed and lust. He smiled, silently stuffing the little fellow back into the place on his chest.

“Wu Wu... Huchi Huchi!”

The little fellow expressed his dissatisfaction, barking in objection.

He forcefully squeezed his head through the clothes, leaving his head out in the open, with his pink little tongue sticking out. On one hand, he was trying to curry favour with Ye Qingyu and on the other hand he was like an inquisitive baby, inspecting everything all around.

“A very cute little puppy.” Jiang Xiaohan smiled.

This girl acted as if she had repaired the relationship between her and Ye Qingyu. She smiled authentically, and said very casually: “It really is too cute. Junior brother Ye, is this the pet you’ve raised? I remember that before entering the [Boundary canyon battlefield], you did not bring a little puppy...” Speaking to here Jiang Xiaohan seemed as if she had only just appreciated something, her face full of shock. “Ah, could it be that this little puppy, was brought out from within the battlefield? This is too impossible, I have never heard of someone able to bring out a living creature from within the battlefield. This little puppy must be something special, could it be that he is a Spirit beast or a Divine beast?”

As these words were said, the hearts of countless people instantly pulsed madly.

Now even the insensitive people who were not able to at the first moment understand what the big headed dog represented, at this moment instantly comprehended the specialness of this adorable little puppy.

After finishing her words, Jiang Xiaohan quivered violently. She looked at Ye Qingyu, then immediately covered her own mouth, as if she had only just realised something. With an embarrassed and apologetic

expression, she quickly rushed to say: “I’m sorry, I’m sorry, I’m sorry. Little brother Qingyu, I really wasn’t...I should have said so much, this really wasn’t intentional.....”

Ye Qingyu only smiled.

“It doesn’t matter.” He looked at Jiang Xiaohan with a smile.

Jiang Xiaohan’s heart was delighted.

But Ye Qingyu continued on: “That’s right, please don’t call me little brother Qingyu in the future. If I remember correctly, when you always followed behind me, you have always called me big brother Qingyu...Of course, what I want to point out is that me saying ‘it doesn’t matter’, is not because of your clumsy acting has really fooled me nor does it mean that someone like you deserves forgiveness for plotting time after time against me. It’s only just that, to bicker with a woman that thinks herself so clever, that always plays with schemes and factions, is really something that is far, far too pointless.”

The complexion of Jiang Xiaohan’s face instantly grew deathly pale.

Ye Qingyu continued on: “Your words are correct. This little fellow, is really something that I’ve managed to obtain from the [Boundary canyon battlefield] and is even something that I’ve managed to obtain from the dragon’s den in the middle of the wilderness. It’s incredible, your words are not wrong, it very possibly could be a Spirit beast, En, or perhaps it is even an even rarer Divine beast...I had never thought that I would be able to bring it out from within the battlefield. How about it, isn’t my luck good?”

The eyes of the surrounding people instantly began burning.

With Ye Qingyu's honest and direct admittance it instantly made the cute and foolish Big head, in the eyes of everyone here, became holy and mysterious. Even if it was only a Spirit beast, it was absolutely a treasure given from the Heavens. No matter what the faction or group, to obtain this big headed dog , their status would instantly surge and their power explosively grow.

## Chapter 091 – He Can Eat More Than Me

---

“However, the moment I left the battlefield, I could faintly hear his imperial highness, Formation Emperor Luoso’s voice from beside my ear. His highness said, that whoever forcefully seizes this little fellow, will inherit his curse and fury. Their family will break apart and die, eternally crushed by the curse of his formation.”

At this point, Ye Qingyu laughed. Looking at the crowd, he said indifferently: “I don’t know whether this is true or false, but at least I believe it. Whoever doesn’t believe in this, can try for themselves and see if the Formation Emperor Luoso is just scaring people and playing around.”

The burning gaze of everyone, finally awakened a little.

Regarding the legend and curse of the Formation Emperor Luoso, it had spread throughout the entire Heaven Wasteland domain.

In history, there had been several world shaking events that had occurred regarding the formation curse. There was once a royal member not of this generation that did not believe in this, and insulted the Formation Emperor Luoso through his actions. The curse that he provoked ultimately caused his royal court to be annihilated and he himself vanished. There was a nearly invincible demon with an insolent mouth, arrogant and wilful. He directly offended a religious altar of the Formation Emperor. As a result, he was struck by formation lightning descending from the skies, turning into ashes...

The martial artists of the Heaven Wasteland domain what they trained and cultivated in was originally from the formation martial path. The origins of their power and battle techniques was intimately related to the formation martial path. They treated the Formation Emperor Luoso like a religion, revering and venerating it to the extreme, treating him like a god. Therefore the words from Ye Qingyu mouth caused many people to shiver in fear. It could not help but make people think twice before acting.

Moreover Ye Qingyu's performance was too amazing, making him seem mysterious. Even the formation projection had no way of capturing his figure within the [Boundary canyon battlefield], causing him to be painted in an enigmatic colour. Creating miracle after miracle, there were many things that could not be explained simply by common logic. It was as if the Formation Emperor himself was really protecting and aiding him.

Such words, in the mouths of other people, would be a ridiculous joke. But when spoken from the mouth of Ye Qingyu, it added to the trustworthiness of such a statement. It could not help but make people evaluate his words carefully before acting.

Finishing saying these words, Ye Qingyu became much more relaxed.

His gaze, once again returned to Jiang Xiaohan's face.

“A woman like you, petty and vain, chasing after wealth and glory. Time and time again, you have plotted against me, attempting to humiliate me. You rely on the fact that you were once my childhood friend so I won't become angry at you, won't retaliate at you. Then I will tell you, from today onwards, everything that has happened between us

is now smoke disappearing in thin air. I have nothing to do with you anymore....if you dare try to scheme against me again, to plot against my friends, then you will become my personal enemy.”

Jiang Xiaohan’s figure was tottering, on the verge of collapse.

In a daze, she looked at Ye Qingyu. Abruptly, she felt as if something special and beautiful had finally left her.

Such a Ye Qingyu was really too unfamiliar to her.

“From now on, if you act against me, then don’t blame me for being merciless.” Ye Qingyu said decisively. He looked at the deathly pale face of Jiang Xiaohan. Pausing for a bit, “It seems I’ve hurt you...En, I originally wanted to say many callous and ruthless words, and wanted to rip my robe as a sign to repudiate our friendship and draw a line on the ground, to break off all ties with you. But my robe is very expensive, and this ground here is hard so this is somewhat impractical. Seeing your wretched appearance...forget it, look after yourself from today onwards.”

Jiang Xiaohan’s entire body began shaking.

The far away Song Qingluo witnessing this scene, could not help but feel a pity that could not be suppressed for Jiang Xiaohan.

This senior sister that she had once talked and laughed with, was in truth a tremendous character within White Deer academy. No matter considering her strength or her schemes, within the entire academy she could be ranked in the top ten. She basked in the limelight for a lot of

things, but at this time, facing Ye Qingyu, she was placed in a completely disadvantageous position. Like a candle in the wind, helpless and without power.

Not only did demon king Ye possessed fierce techniques, his mouth was also really poisonous.

Song Qingluo sighed in her heart.

“Fine, what I should say, I’ve finished saying……I’m leaving.” Ye Qingyu waved his arm, turning and heading outside the Ascending heaven pavilion.

Jiang Xiaohan lowered her head and in her beautiful eyes, endless fury and hatred simmering.

Her body was quivering, her hands tightly clenched into fists. She was like a volcano that was about to erupt. She asked herself again and again in her heart, why would he dare to say such words? This boy that must have a crush on her, why would he dare speak such words, for what reason?

Did he wanted to use such a method to attract her attention?

He must want to use such a method so she would forever remember him.

It must be so.

Jiang Xiaohan's heart was full of bitterness. Lifting her head, she opened her mouth, wanting to say something more. But for some unknown reason, seeing the back of this youth, despite her strength evidently being higher than him, ultimately not even one word was said.

“Hmph ! ”The injured noble elder coldly snorted. In his eyes was a chilling killing intent: “A ridiculous mad student. I’ll see how long you can be arrogant for, you’re just a clumsy clown.”

Hearing this, Ye Qingyu turned around with a grin.

“Old bastard, you have so many useless words. Don’t pretend to be hunting just because you have several dead rats in your pockets. Let me ask you one question, do you dare kill me right now? If you don’t dare, then shut your mouth....Since we have lost all pretense of cordiality, what’s the use of insults? Haha, old bastard, I’m waiting for you to kill me, if you have the guts then come.”

Saying this, he dragged his hand across his neck, in an action similar to cutting his throat than walked out, laughing loudly.

The noble elder was so angry that his body began trembling.

Such an action, such a laughter, was like razor sharp blades, being sliced again and again into his face.

At this instant, he hated that he was unable to slap to death this trash that dared to provoke his authority. But remembering the icy warning of

the old Dean and sensing the disordered inner yuan that was within his heavily injured body, he ultimately managed to endure Ye Qingyu's taunt. A mouthful of involuntary blood was nearly spat out from his mouth.

He had never met such an arrogant and senseless student before.

The people within the Ascending heaven pavilion, was once again stunned by the arrogant and domineering words of demon king Ye.

This noble elder was normally harsh and had a tendency to use his power to bully others. He often utilised his status to suppress others and was easily provoked to make someone's life to difficult for them. But until this moment, no one had really dared to directly confront him. There were many people dissatisfied by this tyrannical noble elder, including even some of the teachers. But they could only secretly curse at this noble elder.

Ye Qingyu was the first person who would argue so openly against him and tear his face in such a public manner.

In this instant, this teenager proudly laughing, possessed a courage that was hard to describe using language alone.

Until the figure of Ye Qingyu was gone in the exit far off, the Ascending heaven pavilion was filled with a serious silence.

For many students, the things that had happened here today was like a dream passing by.

“Fine, if there is no more private matters, then lets select the competitors for the last round.” The grand elder Zhou Yun opened his closed eyes that had always been shut, as if not he had not noticed anything. Saying slowly and politely; “If anyone have any good proposals, then just say it!”

.....

.....

“Such a disturbing competition has finally ended. The leftover affairs, has nothing to do with me.”

Both Ye Qingyu’s hands was placed behind his neck, and on his shoulder was Big Head. They walked out of the Ascending heaven pavilion.

The sunlight shone through the cloud layers. The golden radiant light, made Ye Qingyu squint his eyes slightly.

Long winter was slowly arriving in Deer city. The air became icier by the day. These days, gloomy clouds nearly always covered the sky. Only occasionally , when strong gusts blew past, would the sky brighten up. But very quickly, it would once again be replaced by the heavy clouds. The cold currents that came from the North of the Deer mountain range made the air thousands of miles around colder by the day.

As expected, the sunlight only shone through for a short time. Before

Ye Qingyu had returned to the second year area, it was once again replaced by a heavy grey cloud layer.

Without knowing why, Ye Qingyu's mood was not that good.

Big Head was whimpering on his shoulder, suddenly becoming impatient.

Ye Qingyu abruptly missed the first year canteen that he had spent a majority of his time within.

Therefore he did not directly return to the dormitories of the second year, but went straight towards the first year area.

There were still countless first years crazily converging towards the practice grounds. The victory in the grand competition, had caused an explosion in the moods of the first year students. The atmosphere was saturated with the taste of excitement and joy.

There were two first year students in high spirits, that were bragging loudly about how close their relationship was with demon king Ye. They passed straight by Ye Qingyu, but did not recognise him at all.

“Eh? How could this possibly be.....I'm Ye Qingyu, I'm the great hero. You guys would really ignore me.....”Ye Qingyu thought indignantly, intensely criticising these two in his heart.

I am so famous, why is it that these two scoundrels did not recognise me, and come idolise me?

With such a limited perception, how did they manage to become students of White Deer academy ?

Originally Ye Qingyu felt that he should have disguised himself a little bit, to prevent himself from attracting an ocean of spectators that would surround him. But from the present situation there was no such a need. Because the attention of everyone, was still focused upon the ranking stone mirror, waiting until the completion of the last round. There were absolutely no one who recognised that the person walking by with a dog on his shoulder, was the hero in their hearts, Ye Qingyu.

The demon king Ye who had not managed to satisfy his vanity, arrived with a bellyful of complaints at the canteen.

“Let’s just ferociously eat for a while.”

He greeted the chefs of the canteen, then like a carriage on a familiar and trodden path, brought large bowl of rice and two little dishes to the place where he always sat. He placed Big Head on the chair beside him and turned to fill up on soup --Demon king Ye always felt that before partaking in a meal, one should always drink soup before. He insisted that this was a extremely good practice when eating.

But when he came back holding a large bowl of meat soup.....

“Eh? Eh Eh Eh? What’s happening? Where’s my rice? Where’s my dishes?” Ye Qingyu looked speechless at the empty containers and then looked at the stupidly panting Big Head. He was wagging his tail and had jumped onto the table. At this moment, Ye Qingyu could still not

figured out what exactly had occurred.

“Wu Wu...Huchi Huchi!” Big Head’s tail bobbed up and down affectionately.

He eagerly looked at Ye Qingyu.

No, what was correct that he was looking at the meat soup Ye Qingyu was carrying.

Ye Qingyu looked at him, taken back: “Big Head, don’t tell me that all the food was completely devoured by you.....my heavens, are you a pig, how could you eat so much and in such a short time....You stupid dog, shouldn’t you be a divine beast that doesn’t partake in mortal food? Why can you eat more than me?”

## Chapter 092 – I Admit Defeat

---

“Huchi Huchi.....Wu Wu!”

This little fellow did not pay the slightest attention to the fact that he was currently being scolded by his master. He jumped towards Ye Qingyu’s arm. Ye Qingyu only felt his vision blurring, then his hand was abruptly lighter. When he looked down, he discovered that the meat soup in the bowl had completely disappeared.

“Hachi Hachi ! ”

The big head licked his lips appreciatively, and a drop of clear soup was still dripping from the corner of his mouth.

My God!

Ye Qingyu did not dare to believe what he had just witnessed.

Even if it was an expert at the six Spirit springs stage that had acted in front of him, it was not possible to suck away the entire bowl of soup without even a drop left in an instant. This big headed stupid dog, just what was it’s background that it’s speed could be so quick?

Could it be that he was mistaken?

Ye Qingyu once again filled up on a big bowl of meat soup, placing it in

front of the stupid big headed dog, then widened his eyes to observe carefully.

It must a mistaken sensation, it must be a mistaken sensation.

Ye Qingyu widely opened his eyes.

The silly big headed dog hopped up and down excitedly as if springs had been installed in his hind legs. He leapt onto Ye Qingyu's shoulder, affectionately licking Ye Qingyu's face and then instantly whooshed onto the table.

“Che-Liu! ! ”

A faint sound like lightning. The big bowl of soup instantly disappeared.

Ye Qingyu's eyes was glazed with shock.

This time he was able to see what had happened more clearly than last time. The pink little tongue of the big headed dog could extend and shrink. In an instant, it had stretched over half a metre, like a suction rod. Quick as lightning, with a faint suction, this big bowl that was enough to feed four or five burly men disappeared in a instant.

“Hachi....Hachi?”

Big Head had a countenance that he was still not satisfied.

The little fellow wagged his tail to gain Ye Qingyu's favour, his saliva nearly dripping out.

It still wasn't enough?

Ye Qingyu's chin had nearly dropped to the ground.

The things that this foolish dog had eaten, was enough to last Ye Qingyu himself for three days. How could he still not be full? And his little body, was not even the size of that large bowl of meat soup. His little belly could definitely not contain such an amount. After eating so many things, his little belly had still not expanded in the slightest. The consumed meat soup, just where had it gone?

Could it be that his stomach was something like an inter dimensional pouch?

“Huchi Huchi?”

The Big head licked Ye Qingyu, then opened his mouth and jumped about, biting his tail and glancing at Ye Qingyu meaningfully. Expressing that he was still not full, he wondered why Ye Qingyu did not continue to feed him.

Ye Qingyu grinded his teeth.

“Fine, lets see how much you are able to eat. I won't admit that it's

impossible to feed you till you're full!"

Demon king Ye became ruthless, coming back and carrying a tub of meat soup a metre tall. The tub of meat soup thumped onto the ground. It was placed right in front of the big headed dog, foolish and adorable at the same time. The container emitted the rich fragrance of meat.

This foolish and adorable big headed dog began barking excitedly. After rubbing his white furry head onto Ye Qingyu to express his thanks, his hind legs moved. He jumped above the massive tub, and his tongue once again forming the shape of a suction rod and sticking into the soup. Panting, he appreciatively began sucking. No two breaths had passed before the giant tub of meat soup was entirely gone.

"Hachi Hachi?"

The little fellow eagerly looked at Ye Qingyu.

"You still want to eat?" Ye Qingyu became interested. "Fine lets see just how much you can eat. If I can't gorge you to death, I won't accept it..."

Pak!

Another giant tub of meat soup was brought over.

"Hachi Hachi....Wu Wu?"

The little fellow once again to pant excitedly.

“You still want more? Hmph, I don’t believe that you can eat so much!”  
Ye Qingyu pulled up his sleeves.

Pok!

There third tub.

“Hachi Hachi....Wu Wu?”

The little fellow still did not reject what was placed in front of him.

“You can still eat? I still don’t accept...”

Pok!

The fourth tub.

“Chi Liu Chi Liu.....”

“Shit, I can see the bottom again.....I still won’t accept!”

Pok!

The fifth tub.

“Chi Liu Chi Liu...Hachi?”

“You can still eat? I .....I really can't accept.....”

Pok.

The sixth tub arrived with a bang.

“Hachi Hachi.....Chi Liu?”

“Fuck, you can really eat so much. I stil won't accept.....” Ye Qingyu was about to go crazy.

Pok!

The seventh tub had arrived.

“Hachi Hachi .....Chi Liu?”

Ye Qingyu was dumbfounded. He felt like the stomach of this foolishly cute dog, was really an endless hole. It absolutely could not be filled.

“You can really motherfucking eat, but I still won't accept.....Fine, I accept defeat. What kind of thing did you transform from, to be able to eat so much. I accept defeat, but if you continue to eat so much, I really don't have the resources to raise you, you'll eat me poor!”

Ye Qingyu dragged the silly big headed dog away. In the shocked gazes of everyone, as if they were looking at a monster, they left the public canteen.

.....

.....

After departing from the canteen, Ye Qingyu went to the first year teaching house to find Wang Yan.

He wanted to find out clearly, just what had happened on the little loli's body.

But only when he arrived, did he find out that Wang Yan had still not returned. After asking the other teachers, Ye Qingyu discovered they also did not know where the head teacher went. With no other methods, Ye Qingyu could only temporarily return to the dormitory of the second year.

“You can really eat too much. Just what type of monster did I pick up.”

After returning to the dormitory, Ye Qingyu investigated the big headed dog thoroughly.

But he still could not see any abnormalities.

Ye Qingyu had no way of explaining, that something the size of his palm, just how was he able to consume so many things. Ye Qingyu was

possessed by a strong curiosity have an urge to dissect the stomach of this foolish dog to see what his belly was made of.

“Wu Wu!”

The silly big headed dog affectionately licked at Ye Qingyu’s palm.

The little fellow from the beginning had an countenance that he was extremely familiar with Ye Qingyu’s abode. He jumped onto the bed, lying down down with his tongue sticking out. Closing his eyes, he had a tired appearance.

After thinking of the bizarre background of this little fellow, and remembering the peculiar things that happened to him within the blood pool in the dragons den, Ye Qingyu regarded this little fellow more importantly. Today at Ascending heaven pavilion, his departing words were not entirely just a story that he had made up to threaten them. In reality, within the depths of his heart, Ye Qingyu really had some expectations. He wished that this little fellow was really some kind of Spirit beast or Divine beast.

Today since Jiang Xiaohan had intentionally pointed out the background of the silly big headed dog, Ye Qingyu could be said to have attracted some trouble.

“You are able to eat so much, I can’t afford to raise you. If some noble factions really want to rob me from you, then I’ll just let them take you. Then you can do whatever you wish, isn’t that good?” Ye Qingyu began joking.

The big headed dog gave him a supercilious look.

Ye Qingyu chuckled loudly. Taking off all his clothes apart from his underwear, he went to take a wash. After spending time in battle in the [Boundary canyon battlefield] for so long, and being bathed in the viscous pool of blood for who knows how long, his entire body emitted a bloody odour. He could not wait to wash himself thoroughly.

After he returned from his wash, he discovered the big headed dog had already curled up on his bed in the midst of slumber.

Ye Qingyu dropped a piece of clothing over the little fellow. A faint smile could not help but be shown on the corner of his lips.

The little fellow in the midst of his dreams, subconsciously rubbed his head against Ye Qingyu's palm. The warm and fuzzy feeling of this contact, caused a itchy feeling to be born within Ye Qingyu's heart.

After resting for a while, he activated the formation within his room, isolating himself and closing himself from the outside.

This time, the rewards he obtained from the [Boundary canyon battlefield] was plentiful. Not only did he obtain the [Blood of the Flame devil beast] and the [Blood of the yuan qi giant], he also obtained a large quantity of yuan qi rewards. Ye Qingyu sat in a meditative position, activating his nameless breathing technique. The yuan qi within his body began circulating rapidly. Around his entire body, there was an invisible forcefield that slowly swirled. As if it was a streaming fog barrier, it enveloped him within.

In his dantian world, another change had occurred.

He had already successfully excavated two Spirit springs. With a roar, clear Spring waters shout out, soaring hundreds of metres into the sky. Hundreds of metres around the Spring, a small lake had already been formed that was so clear, one was able to see the very bottom. It unceasingly nourished the dead Desert world within his Dantian, bringing with it surging vitality.

Of course, for the boundless and endless desert in his dantian, these two Springs was like a cup of water on a burning cart of firewood. It could not fundamentally change anything.

Apart from the number of Spirit springs deciding the future success of the martial artist, there was another theory in the yuan qi martial way. It was said that the greater the potential of the martial artist, the larger would the desert world in their dantian be. And furthermore, the desert in their dantian world would continue to grow along with the increase in strength of the martial artists. From this perspective, the common saying of the White Deer teachers 'There is no limits to the martial way' was completely correct.

From the moment he could observe inside him through inner vision, there was no way Ye Qingyu could clearly discern, exactly how large his desert dantian world was exactly.

But he did not think too deeply about such things.

At this time, during the fighting within the [Boundary canyon battlefield], Ye Qingyu had already planted the third [Yuan qi kindling]

within his Dantian world. The crystal was already translucent, buried deeply within the Dantian desert. After Ye Qingyu concentrated and entered into the state of inner vision, he could begin to excavate his third Spirit spring.

As he progressed, the difficulty of excavating the Spirit spring would increase.

Ye Qingyu did not dare delay. He took out a drop of the [Blood of the yuan qi giant]. Placing the blood that had already been consolidated into clear pearls, he kept it under his tongue. Then he activated his nameless breathing technique, beginning to absorb the yuan qi of Heaven and Earth. Coordinating with his inner yuan, he began agitating the third [yuan qi kindling], excavating the Spirit spring.

With the two previous experiences, this time around he was extremely familiar and clear about what he had to do.

With Ye Qingyu's dormitory at the centre, all the yuan qi in a radius of a thousand metres rapidly gathered together. The mist vapour took shape, visible to the naked eye, just like a violently rotating mist funnel, rapidly compressing and ultimately entering into Ye Qingyu's body. Passing through his four limbs and hundreds of bones, his internal organs. Finally it transformed into a hurricane, taking shape within the desert dantian world. It caused flashes of lightning and the roar of thunder throughout the desert dantian world, as if this magnificent world was being newly created.

The hurricane finally stabilised above the third [yuan qi kindling], congealing there without dispersing.

Ye Qingyu gradually entered into a blank state of mind, able to sense every minute change happening within his body.

“That can’t do, a little bit is still lacking.....there is not enough yuan qi from Heaven and Earth!” Ye Qingyu could clearly sense the difficulty of excavating a high number of Spirit springs. The entire Deer mountain range and Deer city was an area concentrated in yuan qi, but at this time the yuan qi gathering from the outside world was ultimately lacking.

Having no other choice, Ye Qingyu diverted the yuan qi waters from his two other Spirit springs that had already taken shape.

A little bit was still lacking.

“I can only rely on the drop of yuan qi liquid then!”

The back of Ye Qingyu’s tongue moved, and swallowed the pearl shaped blob of yuan qi blood into his stomach.

## Chapter 093 – Third Spirit Spring

---

Fundamentally the [Blood of the yuan qi giant] was consolidated from the purest yuan qi of Heaven and Earth within the [Boundary canyon battlefield]. This was due to the fact that the body of the yuan qi giant was originally made from the laws of yuan qi. It's blood did not contain any impurities at all, and after ingesting it into your body, it would transform into surging yuan qi. Even if it was just a tiny drop from [Blood of the yuan qi giant], it could turn into a vast quantity of yuan qi, quickly restoring his body's needs.

Ye Qingyu swallowed the drop of [Blood of the yuan qi giant].

After the blood was in his stomach, he really could clearly feel a strong and chilly energy being activated. It flowed throughout his limbs and bones, nourishing every single area. Then it gushed like the rush of a large river, finally converging within his limbs and bones and ultimately entering the dantian world.

In a short amount of time, within the dantian desert world, the weather completely changed. Thunder and lightning erupted.

The yuan qi hurricane that had always remained above the third [yuan qi kindling] abruptly transformed. As if it was being assigned its final task, it expended the last of its life energy. Like an enormous silver dragon, it bellowed and roared. From the air, it dived down, frantically rotating. In a moments time, it had already drilled past the surface layer of the desert, advancing rapidly towards the deeply buried yuan qi kindling.

“Success ! ”

Ye Qingyu was overjoyed.

When the yuan qi silver dragon impacted against the [yuan qi kindling], it was as if the sky's thunder had incited the fire under the earth. The earth exploded, the ground cracking apart. A clear yuan spring emerged in the rumbling, breaking out from the underground desert and soaring into the sky hundred of metres high. Then it became rain and mist, full of vitality, spraying it everyone around the surroundings.

The Spirit spring had been excavated successfully.

The third Spirit spring had appeared.

Ye Qingyu's power had taken yet another step forward towards the ultimate level.

“This time the yuan qi of this Spirit spring, is much more explosive and turbulent than the first and second Spring. From the very beginning, I am reached the full Spirit spring stage.” Ye Qingyu gradually opened his eyes, a satisfied smile appearing on his face. “It seems like the fighting and yuan qi rewards within the [Boundary canyon battlefield] has stockpiled to some extent. Preparations paved the way for success. I succeeded in one strike.”

He stood up. He could feel the fluctuating yuan qi that was within body was like the violent swell of a river.

It was as if the world in front of his eyes had become ever clearer and more vibrant. After opening his eyes, he could see every minute detail within his room. Even if it was just a speck of dust on the table he was able to see the protrusion and craginess of it. When he closed his eyes, it was as if he could hear the various formations of different colours functioning on the walls, yuan qi energy flowing through.

Ye Qingyu senses were at least three or four times more sensitive than before.

This was not the only change. When Ye Qingyu gradually moved his body, he could clearly sense, that after entering into the third Spirit spring stage, every inch of his body felt far more sensitive. As long as he concentrated slightly, he could clearly discern every tiny change occurring within his body.

When Ye Qingyu awakened within the pool of blood, he had vaguely felt that the toughness of his body, because of some mysterious reason, had multiplied several times over. This gave birth to a strange impression within him, as if his will could not keep up with the growth and development of his powerful body. He could not control his body as his heart willed because his consciousness and inner yuan were still far too weak, incapable of becoming compatible with his vigorous body.

After entering the third Spirit spring stage, such a feeling disappeared to a large extent.

As every Spirit spring was opened, for the martial artist, it was tantamount to a peaceful rebirth. There were many benefits apart from purely the growth in their inner yuan. Accordingly, the martial artist's familiarity with their own body would also become clearer. The lifespan

of this martial artist, his vitality, and various other functions of the body would also strengthen.

For a martial artist to cultivate, they needed time.

They needed a large amount of time.

Normally, for a person of the one Spirit spring stage to enter the second stage, with average talent, the students needed around two years of time. Little geniuses with exceptional talent, only needed approximately a year of time —of course, noble youths with powerful family backgrounds, such as Xia Houwu, had always been nourished with Spirit herbs and pills, so therefore he did not need a year to achieve this.

And Ye Qingyu, from someone with completely no foundations to the third Spirit spring stage had taken him less than half a year of time. This sort of cultivation speed could definitely shock the whole of society. Once this news was spread out, it would definitely cause a huge sensation with the end result that Ye Qingyu would be recognised as a peerless genius.

With Ye Qingyu's present level of strength, he could directly enter the fourth year of the White Deer academy.

And even after entering the fourth year, such a strength could definitely be placed above average in the fourth year rankings.

But at this moment, Ye Qingyu was not preparing to do this.

Ye Qingyu began to have a new way of thinking.

Especially after experiencing the [Boundary canyon battlefield], Ye Qingyu suddenly became disappointed in the entire White Deer academy.

This was not simply because of the arrogance and despotic nobles, such as Qin Wushuang and Xia Houwu. It was also not only because of the fact that his strength was neither taught nor instructed by the teachers of the academy. The reason he was disappointed was because from the bodies of the noble elders, Ye Qingyu was able to smell a rich odour of rot and decay. He was able to understand that the White Deer academy today, was like a person about to die. The disease has already attacked the vitals and ingrained habits were hard to overcome. White Deer academy had lost their heart to forge ahead. Like a putrid and rotten pond, it would be very difficult to give birth to a dragon in such an environment.

These days, everything had changed. From a great academy that had ranked in the upper rankings of the ranking of the ten academies, from a holy martial place that had once nourished and raised countless experts of the country's army, White Deer academy had become the bottom of the ten academies. There was a reason for why the academy became a tool for the children of the noble families in the Deer mountain range that was used to bully others.

Ye Qingyu pondered and questioned himself. In such an academy, just what could he learn?

Even though he had regained some glory and dignity for the academy in the fourth round of the grand competition, turning around a desperate situation. But when he returned to the Ascending heaven pavilion, there were several noble elders that made a deer out to be a horse<sup>1</sup> , making

things difficult to him. They wholeheartedly wanted to him to lose his standing and fall from grace. Such a sinister intention, if he stayed for long within the White Deer academy, just what would his final ending be?

Both the old Dean and Wang Yan evidently favoured him, but they could only protect him for a period of time, could they protect him his entire life?

But if he left White Deer academy, just where could he go?

Ye Qingyu at this time, felt slightly lost.

White Deer academy was the entity that gave Ye Qingyu the opportunity to become a martial artist. But he did not feel that it was the best choice to continue in such a place.

Countless ideas flowed within his mind. Ye Qingyu found it difficult to make a choice.

In his hesitation, he slowly extended his arm. Within his palm, a bright light flickered, and the [Little Shang sword] appeared in this gentle glow within his hand. Like a throbbing pool of limpid autumn waters, the back of the sword was like the surface of a mirror, flickering with radiance shining onto Ye Qignyu's face.

Compared to the time six months ago, after experiencing the trials and hardships, Ye Qingyu's face had matured very much. His face seemed sharper, the pupil of his eyes like bright stars, eyebrow like swords, his

hair cut apart and his nose suspended firmly. His entire figure emitted an aura of thin heroic spirit.

Ye Qingyu touched the Little Shang sword in his hand.

After retrieving this Spirit weapon from the two River organisation, Ye Qingyu had always kept this Spirit weapon submerged within his first Spirit spring. After receiving the nourishment of his yuan qi, the Little Shang sword appeared increasingly resplendent. Without the slightest impurity, as if it was a pearl that was covered in dust finally being cleaned of its murkiness. The sword ultimately issued the lustre that had always belonged to the weapon.

Feeling the energy within this weapon, Ye Qingyu could easily judge that the power of the Little Shang sword was at least four times greater than the Inexorable spear.

Within the [Boundary canyon battlefield], despite encountering dangers several time, Ye Qingyu did not summon the Little Shang sword to not expose the existence of this Spirit weapon. One reason for this was because he did not train in any sword techniques. The other reason was that Ye Qingyu did not want to expose all the cards under his sleeve in front of all the higher ups of the academy and the elites of each year.

“I have to find a day to go to the public library of the fourth years, to see if there is a suitable sword technique for me.”

Ye Qingyu was eager to give it a try. The Inexorable spear had been crippled within the [Boundary canyon battlefield]. Ye Qingyu felt this was a great pity. At the present time, the only weapon that he could

utilise was the Little Shang sword, so he had the intention to begin training in sword techniques.

As he pondered, within his dantian world, an abnormal change began happening.

The yuan qi waters within the third Spirit spring, suddenly soared into the sky, transforming into a yuan qi silver dragon. Flowing throughout his limbs and bones, it ultimately converged towards Ye Qingyu's brain. The speed was extremely quick and the process was not something Ye Qingyu could fundamentally control.

“It's come again ! ”

Ye Qingyu did not panic.

In his two previous attempts where he succeeded in excavating a Spirit spring, the bronze book in his sea of consciousness [Fiendgod titled chart] would crazily absorb the yuan qi of that spring. After doing so, it would purify the yuan qi and return it back to him. Then, the seal of some sections of the book, would be unlocked. In this time yet again, not long after the third Spirit spring had been excavated, the same thing really occurred again.

Ye Qingyu stood where he was, activating the nameless breathing technique.

In the blink of an eye, the inner yuan in his body was crazily absorbed by the bronze book.

Ye Qingyu once again returned to a death like state. His body withered away. His life force was about to snap, as if it was a candle in the wind, able to be extinguished at any moment. But it always maintained that tiniest thread of connection, close to indistinguishable. It was a very peculiar state of living death.

After a short while, the energy fluctuated within the bronze book.

A purified yuan qi to the extreme like the torrent of a mountain landslide rushed out from the book. Entering into Ye Qingyu's body, it nourished the majority of the organs that had nearly been completely withered and consumed earlier. This type of method was similar to the body refining techniques where one trained to the extreme limits. Although this type of training was difficult to undergo but the effect was exceptionally good.

Fifteen minutes later.

Ye Qingyu let out a comfortable and long exhalation.

Not only had the inner yuan in his body completely recovered, but the yuan qi was even purer and the flow was quicker. The compatibility with his body was also higher. Inner yuan could be directed wherever he wanted like it was his own arm. Practically, as long as he willed it, he could make the inner yuan do as his thoughts wished.

His will and the inner yuan was united, down to the tiniest of details.

This was a level of control over their inner yuan that only people who excavated over twenty Springs should be able to achieve. But after several fortuitous encounters and the Bronze book, Ye Qingyu had already achieved this today.

After the repayment was over, the thing Ye Qingyu was looking forward to even more happened.

Every time the repayment was complete, part of the contents within the [Fiendgod titled chart] would be unsealed. The first time was the four moves of the golden armoured king, the second was the [Sentry guard]. And this was the third time, just what kind of new page would be unsealed?

“If it is a technique for the sword, then this is the best!”

Completely submerged by expectations, he summoned the bronze book [Fiendgod titled chart].

-----

1. Misrepresenting a situation ↵

## Chapter 094 – The Four Moves Of The Unmatched General

---

The contents that would be unlocked within the bronze book, just what section would it be?

Ye Qingyu eagerly flicked through the pages.

The [Fiendgod titled chart] could be divided into three sections: [Titled Fiendgods], [Titled divine weapons] and [Titled strange objects]. According to Ye Qignyu's previous experience, the only section that would display yuan qi battle techniques was the [Titled Fiendgod] part. Therefore, in his very first moment of opening the book, he immediately went to the [Titled Fiendgod] section in search for it.

The next instant, Ye Qingyu became excited.

The second row in the [Titled Fiendgod] index was no longer pale and dim. It was flickering with a faint glow, emitting an extremely disturbing dream like colour and lustre.

The section that was unlocked really was the [Titled Fiendgod].

What Ye Qingyu obtained the first time that this section was unsealed was the four moves of the golden armoured king.

This time, just what sort of battle technique would it bring Ye Qingyu?

Ye Qingyu's heart palpating furiously. According to the unsealed index, he directly flipped to this page.

Sure enough as Ye Qingyu was expecting, on the page of the bronze book there was a meticulous portrait of a figure depicted within. But this person was different from the awe inspiring presence of the golden armoured king. The portrait of this character was tall and sturdy, maroon short hair, with a determined and solemn expression. He was wearing a sky blue armour that could not be said to be grand. A broad double edged sword was stabbed into the ground, towering majestically. He was like a person charging and breaking through enemy lines, an unrivalled and unique fierce general.

Ye Qingyu's gaze, in the first instance, landed on the broad double edged sword!

Sword!

It really was a sword!

The weapon of this titled Fiendgod was a sword, then did this represent that the battle technique he could obtain this time, was likely to be a sword manual?

In an expectant mood, Ye Qingyu, he inserted yuan qi following the pattern within the page of the bronze book.

A sky blue brilliant radiance instantly shimmered from the page.

The person on the page, abruptly began moving.

“Follow my lead and charge forward!”

Indistinctly, a resolute and imposing shout sounded from next to Ye Qingyu's ear

It was the same as the first time when the illusion of the golden armoured king had rushed out from the page. This unmatched general plucked out the broad sword stabbed into the ground and held it with both hands, leaning the sword against the left of his chest. He took a step out, instantly charging out of the page and appearing in front of Ye Qingyu, then halting abruptly. Around his entire figure were flickers of green light. A strange green patten moved and fluctuated according to these bizarre lights.

An extremely strong life force surged around the projection of this person.

Ye Qingyu opened his eyes wide to carefully observe.

He knew, that this unmatched general was about to demonstrate his sword techniques.

As expected, after a short paused, both eyes of this general suddenly opened, radiance glimmering from within. He was about to make his move.

“【Soul stealing heaven strike】 ! ”

The light in the exceptional general's eyes exploded and overflowed.

He shouted loudly, still holding his sword with both hands, his body not moving yet. But very quickly, someone abnormal began to happen. The sword was raised high up and between the sword handle and the hands, there was an explosive golden radiance. As if some strange technique was being activated, this golden light pierced from his eyes, and with the sword raised high up, he charged forward.

Ye Qingyu felt his vision blurring.

He suddenly saw the originally still and calm figure of the general springing into motion. From still to striking out, he did so at such a quick speed that it was unbelievable. His entire person was like a streak of light, unfathomably stepping over a distance of space, the gale from the sword strike chopping down.

A fantastic sword will exploded, dispersing throughout.

This sword strike on the surface seemed ordinary and mediocre, but within this simple strike, there were some hard to understand meaning within that Ye Qingyu could not comprehend at this time. He could vaguely feel that this sword strike was not as simple as it first seemed.

“【Brave the whole world】 ! ”

The unmatched general loudly shouted again, the second technique

being shown.

This time his body did not move.

A golden sword qi emitted from his body. Sword qi after sword qi were like golden snakes dancing moving according to the formation pattern. In the time of a spark, there were three golden shields fluctuating and moving around his body. As if they were divine shields, they protected him within.

“This technique, the sword qi has transformed into a golden shield....this really is a rare change from normal!”

Ye Qingyu somewhat comprehended this.

The unmatched general shouted yet again.

He held the broad sword and struck sideways horizontally. At the same time, his body began rotating violently, becoming a revolving whirlwind in an instant. The sword began whistling like a strong wind, his entire person becoming a storm of swords. Densely packed sword shadows struck out in all directions, endlessly, the naked sword flickering.

And at the last moment, there were only the swords in the air. One could no longer see the figure of the body.

“An extremely strong crowd fighting technique.”

Ye Qingyu could not help but swallow a mouthful of saliva.

The third technique was evidently a move for fighting against a number of people.

This type of attack did not distinguish between the enemies. One man and one sword, transformed into an unblockable sword tornado. Everywhere it passed, everything was mercilessly sliced apart. One could imagine, if it was utilised in a true battlefield, such a technique was absolutely the nightmare of the opposing army.

Such a technique, even if used in single battle, possessed a destructive power.

“[Judgement of the sword]!”

After the general finished exhibiting the third move, he instantly demonstrated the fourth.

Both hands holding the sword, he abruptly stilled. In his eyes, there was a divine resplendent light. Gripping the sword hilt, he suddenly stabbed half the sword in to the ground, blossoming with a golden dazzling light.

Everything suddenly stopped.

There was a strange silence.

It was as if nothing had happened.

Or as if an omen that the most frightening thing was about to occur.

When Ye Qingyu was feeling slightly confused, in an instant, within the air, the sword screamed. The next instant, one was able to see that thousands tens of thousands of sword light was gathering, transforming into a incomparably large divine golden sword. It descended from mid air, exploding with a thud into the endless earth. In a moments time, the Earth broke apart, the golden light of the sword covering the sky and hiding the earth. Everything within a thousand metre was annihilated by this suddenly descending divine weapon.

It was as if a sword God had given his judgement from the heavens. For mortals it would not be possible for them to evade or block.

Ye Qingyu was completely dazed.

“Judgement of the sword? This technique is really the ultimate judgement from the sword path!”

Ye Qingyu was unable to contain his joy after seeing this.

And at this time, the peerless general retrieved the sword stabbed in the ground. Both hands holding on to the sword handle, he gradually returned to his original stance.

The wind rustled his short maroon hair. His entire person radiated with an incomparable solemnness and bravery. His tall and sturdy figure

was stable like a boulder. A man and his sword alone, was superior to a magnificent army with thousand of horses and soldiers. As if he was a returning general that always won, he stared far off into the distance. There was an indescribable feeling of justice and courage emitting from him. It could not help but make people admire him.

Blue and gold light rays of light circulated.

The projection of the unmatched general gradually faded, turning into radiance and returning back into the bronze book.

The sword techniques had been fully demonstrated.

It was the same as the golden armoured king, there were still only four moves.

Ye Qingyu was intoxicated.

The killing sword techniques of this unmatched general only had four moves that seemed simple. But every move contained profound essences and power, every move was as if it was the combination of the essences of countless sword techniques. As the saying goes, 'the heavy sword has no sharp edges, but was still skilfully made'. The four techniques did not seem exquisite at all, but was extremely practical.

Although Ye Qingyu had not trained in it yet, but only through seeing it once, he sensed that the four techniques of this unmatched general were different methods leading to the same result. Similar to the four moves of the golden armoured king —if the four moves were ingeniously

combined together, the power of it together would far exceed that of the solo techniques.

Such a destructive sword technique really made Ye Qingyu too satisfied.

Ye Qingyu could not wait to enter with his consciousness into this page of the bronze book. He gradually entered the state of blankness and forgetting himself. Doing his utmost, he began comprehending the secrets behind the four techniques of the unmatched general.

The same as last time, just as his consciousness entered into the bronze book, there were inexplicably information regarding these sword techniques that sprung into this mind. The tips and secrets behind these four second techniques, everything regarding it appeared within Ye Qingyu's thoughts, as if he had seen them tens of thousands of times before.

“The four techniques of the unmatched general, needs a method for the inner yuan to activate for it to work.....”

“So before the unmatched general performs these four moves there will be green lights around his body following a strange pattern. This is not disordered and without mess, it was a close and intimate method for training in the way of the sword. Not only can it be used to activate these four techniques, but it can also allow the wounds of the person training in this to recover faster. Once the battle is finished, under such a method, the recovery rate of the person trained in this technique, will definitely be faster than his opponent many times over!”

“Really, the four sword techniques is not as simple as it first seems.

Especially the first move, [Soul stealing heaven strike], if it manages to hit the opponent it can temporarily freeze the inner yuan of the opponent. This will cause them to be unable to use their own yuan qi battle techniques.....The temporary freezing of their yuan qi, in the match between experts, can decide the victor and loser in an instant!”

Vast training information and the power of the battle techniques appeared in Ye Qingyu’s mind

He pondered over them in detail.

Time, in Ye Qingyu’s cultivation state where he forgot himself, flowed past quickly.

In the blink of an eye, three days had passed.....

.....

Zi-ya !

Ye Qingyu opened the door of his courtyard, walking out.

He had isolated himself in training for four days already with great results. Now, he had finally ended this period of solitary training and left the confines of his room. Breathing deep breaths of icy but fresh air, it made him instantly feel reinvigorated.

“Eh? It’s going to snow?”

Gloomy clouds still covered the sky, with the sun unable to be seen.

Ye Qingyu could feel a coldness at the back of his hand. When he closely examined, he discovered that it was a snowflake falling down.

Was this the first snow of the winter season?

Ye Qingyu let out a long sigh.

His mood, suddenly became the same as the clouds in the sky, gloomy.

The winter season of the Deer mountain range was both cold and long. Every year, the winter season was the most difficult season for the poor commoners. A snow would continue on for at least tens of days, the cold and hunger taking away the life of countless people. After entering the winter period, the security and stability of Deer city would become much worse and chaotic. Everywhere there would be fighting and killing occurring. Many people pushed to the edges by the cold, under the threat of their death, became crazy and mad. In such a time, even if there was a stale bun, it could incite a fight at any time that would reap away the lives of over tens of people.

## Chapter 095 – The Change Within The City

---

Before Ye Qingyu had even entered the White Deer academy, he had always disliked the winter.

The noble youths could wear warm soft furs and have snowball fights on the snow covered earth, enjoying the joy of the childhood on winter days. But children of the poor, in such a season, faced a test of life and death.

Ye Qingyu had also once been beset by hunger and cold.

He had seen with his own eyes that his little friends that he had made during the summer, in the long lasting winter day becoming icy corpses because of the cold and hunger and the ensuing fighting. All their dreams and visions for the future, was mercilessly buried along with their icy corpse within this field of white snow.

In these long four years of time, Ye Qingyu also did not have it easy. Losing the protection of his parents and being deserted by everyone close to him, Ye Qingyu also passed by this winter season with terrible difficulty. If not for the nameless breathing technique that his father had left behind, allowing Ye Qingyu to withstand the icy cold he would have long froze to death. Further to this, he became someone possessing herculean strength, with very little people willing to incite him. If not for this, it was likely that Ye Qingyu would become similar to many poor little children, dying in this long winter.

Even if Ye Qingyu had finally become a student of White Deer academy,

possessing an even greater strength and could escape from the suffering of this long lasting winter, he still hated the winter.

“Because the winter season, is a season of death!”

Ye Qingyu sighed with sorrow.

Within five minutes of time, the snowflakes in the air that were floating down became more and more, larger and larger. Very quickly, this chaotic white began to shroud the Earth. Every near and far scenery, was as if it was covered by a layer of white moonlight, an indescribable chill in the air.

Ye Qingyu suddenly wanted to return to the Ye mansion to have a look.

He did not know if Qin Lan, Tang San and the others had prepared well for this long lasting winter.

After having such an intention, he did not tarry any longer.

After going to the second year administration area for a leave of absence, he headed straight outside of the White Deer academy.

As he passed by the first year area, Ye Qingyu went in search of Wang Yan again, wanting to enquire about the matters about the little loli Song Xiaojun. But there was still nothing to be gained. After the last round between the two academies had ended, four days had already passed. As expected, within the fifth and final round, White Deer academy completely and utterly lost. The Azure Phoenix people, who had lost in

the fourth round, released all their rage and anger in the final round of the grand competition. White Deer academy lost tragically, not even able to obtain a single kill.

And from that day onwards, the head teacher of the first year Wang Yan did not appear within the academy again.

Ye Qingyu asked several first year teachers that could be counted as familiar, but the teachers still did not know where Wang Yan was nor how to contact her. And as for the matters regarding Song Xiaojun, after asking several people, he still did not find out anything.

In such a situation, worry began to sprout from Ye Qingyu's heart.

As he was turning things over in his mind, he came to the gate of the White Deer academy. As he handed over his absent nameplate, after confirming and walking outside of the gate, a person slowly walked towards him. If it was not the head teacher of the first year Wang Yan, who else could it be?

Ye Qingyu did not expect, that he would bump into Wang Yan in such a location

This was really travelling far and wide to look for something but finding it simply in the end.

Within the snowy wind, this head teacher of the first year seemed to be in a haste. Smoke and dust covered her body.

Her face was somewhat pale and pallid, making Ye Qingyu become curious.

With Wang Yan's strength, she had long reached the stage where dust could not come near her. Not to mention White Deer academy, even if in the entire Deer city, her strength was enough to rank in the top ten. She was an absolute expert, her inner yuan deep and profound, vigorous vitality and a bubbling bloodline. Even if she continuously battled for ten days and ten nights, she would not display any signs of tiredness. But in this short five days of time, she had obviously become tired and drained. Just what had occurred?

At the same time, Wang Yan also suddenly saw Ye Qingyu.

But she only exchanged a glance, and brushed past his shoulder.

Ye Qingyu was about to turn around and say something, when he heard Wang Yan's voice clearly sounding beside his ear: "I know what you want to ask. Xiaojun is fine, it's just that a little condition has appeared within her body. In the near future, something big is going to happen within the city. Remember, no matter what happens, you must remain outside from this and not get involved....if you want to see the little loli, then three days later, come to the [Mist Residence] in the southern district."

Secret sound transfer.

Using a vast inner yuan, and following a secret method of formation, it allowed one to compress their voice into a straight line. This could be controlled freely and could be used to enter in someone's ear, with the people beside the target none the wiser --this was only something that

experts with great inner yuan could do. At the very least, with Ye Qingyu's current three Spirit springs, it was not something he could achieve.

As the voice finished speaking, Wang Yan had already disappeared within the entrance of the academy.

In the vast and obscure snowy wind, her shadow was gone.

Ye Qingyu paused slightly, but did not turn back in the end. Not displaying any signs of abnormality, his footsteps did not stop but continued onwards within the snowy wind, heading to the Northern city district. His body covered in a snowy layer, he was no different from the other people walking in the streets.

But in reality, in his heart, he was completely shaken.

Wang Yan's words were short, but it exposed a tremendous amount of information. Firstly, she seemed to be under the surveillance of some sort of faction so she could not stop and speak with him. And a problem had occurred on the little loli's body so that was the reason she did not appear in these past days. And lastly, Wang Yan said that there would very quickly be something big going on.....

This seemed to be the most important piece of information.

What kind of major event?

That even Wang Yan would be afraid of the consequences?

Ye Qingyu's heart was full of questions, but he did not say anything at all and arrived at the Ye mansion within the Northern district.

Very quickly, the servants passed on the message that he had arrived. By the time Ye Qingyu had reached the anteroom, Qin Lan and Little Grass with faces filled with joy were there to welcome him. Their complexions compared to what they were like previously was so much better, the entire atmosphere in the mansion especially cheerful and light hearted.

“Brother Qingyu, you've returned. Little Grass have missed you.”

The little girl came bounding into Ye Qingyu's embrace.

Ye Qingyu intimately patted the forehead of the little girl. With a laugh: “Haha, our little princess is becoming more and more beautiful. But why have you not gone to the Taoxuan pavilion to practice martial arts? Has Little Grass been slacking off?”

“I haven't. The masters have complimented on me on my talent with rapid advancement. Today I have specially asked for an absence from the masters, to come and celebrate mother's birthday.” Little Grass stuck out her tongue and said laughingly: “Brother Qingyu, you must have come back here specially to come and pass mother's birthday with her, isn't that right? Hehe, where's your birthday present?”

Ye Qingyu was taken back and suddenly realised, that today was Qin Lan's birthday.

“That’s enough Little Grass, don’t annoy your brother Qingyu. You are a big girl now, you should be a little more ladylike....” A blessed smile was on Qin Lan’s face. In these days, even in her dreams she would smile. Her life had completely turned on its head. Seeing that Little Grass could live on carefree and without troubles, as a mother, this made her happier than anything else.

After entering the main hall and speaking a few words, a person arriving from outside could be heard.

It was the head supervisor Tang San. He had returned.

“Young master, you’ve returned.” Tang San said laughingly and paying his respects. “I was at the [Lianfeng smithery] taking stock, when Qin Lan sent people to find me, saying old man Ye have returned, I was hurrying to come back....”

Ye Qingyu gave this person a light kick. “What old man Ye? I’m only fourteen years old, you say it like I’m seventy or eighty. You little kid, your mouth is becoming more and more slippery. It seems like I have to consider carefully, whether my decision to make you the head supervisor was correct.”

Tang San quickly had an expression of someone begging for forgiveness. “Young master, I was wrong.”

Everyone in the main hall began laughing.

In these days, everyone began to understand Tang San's personality. Apart from having a slippery mouth, his character was extremely good. The way he did things was fair and serious, with definite ideas. He was someone with ability.

After the incident in Heavenly fragrance restaurant, all the properties such as Heavenly fragrance restaurant, Taoxuan pavilion, Lianfen smithery, and Murong shop once again returned to the Ye family. There were over a thousand things to do. Even a well experienced supervisor needed to spend an immense amount of effort to put everything back into business. Tang San was only a young man, without much previous experience. But after withstanding several days without sleep, he could be said to have settled everything down correctly.

In reality, only someone like Ye Qingyu who took a off hand approach in managing things, would be so ridiculous as to give the right to handle every matter to someone like Tang San with zero experience. If it was another person they would definitely spend a large amount of money to recruit a old person with rich experiences to handle such matters.

Tang San was a extremely determined youth with ambition.

He knew such an opportunity did not come easily. In these days, he nearly did not rest or sleep. Everyday he would only take a break for a short amount of time, with the rest of his time dedicated to rushing about between these properties. After expending a great deal of mental and physical effort, he finally manage to put everything back into shape. Today, he was just checking the stock of [Lianfeng smithery] distinguishing between the old stock and the bad stock. Then Qin Lan had sent people to tell him that Ye Qingyu had returned.

“Young master, the book of accounts is here. Last time, this account was not complete. But this time, I have managed to sort everything properly. There is the list of employees of the different businesses and I’ve also marked down the places that needs your personal directions....” After joking around, Tang San became serious.

Ye Qingyu had a headache once again.

“Eh, in future, you don’t need to report such things to me.” Ye Qingyu massaged his head, distressed. After pausing, he said again: “In the areas that you need my instructions, just pass it to Aunt Lan, or you could even give it to Little Grass to have a look.”

Tang San had a even greater headache. “This.....”

“Fine, fine, lets not speak about this. Today is Aunt Lan’s birthday, we should celebrate well.” Ye Qingyu waved his hand, very quickly diverting the subject. “Speaking about this, this is my first time celebrating Aunt Lan’s birthday, I must treat it importantly. Little San, do you have any good ideas?”

Tang San began to beam with joy: “Originally I wanted to arrange this matter in a grand fashion. But Aunt Lan did not allow it, saying that the matters in the mansion had just settled down and that young master was still studying at the White Deer academy with a large expenditure. She wanted to restrict our spending and did not allow us to make a fuss over this. But since young master has spoken then rest assured, Little San I will definitely handle this matter beautifully.”

Qin Lan said in a rush: “Xiaoyu, I really don’t need it. The mansion has

only just stabilised....”

Ye Qingyu waved his hands. “Don’t refuse it anymore. It is namely because our mansion has just stabilised, that we need such a joyful event to allow everyone to relax. I think that for the entire Ye mansion, this is a good thing....Haha, listen to me, this matter is settled.”

“Wooooo, brother Xiaoyu is the best.” Little Grass hopped up and down in joy.

Qin Lan could not say anything more, and could only stand by the side and constantly pester Tang San to not spend too much.

There was an excited smile on Ye Qingyu’s face.

Perhaps this was one of the reason that he had suddenly wished to return to the Ye mansion. Only here, could he experience and sense the care of a family. Only here could he experience that warm affection. For the Ye Qingyu where both his parents had died, such an experience was far too rare for him.

Tang San rushed out with a smile to take care of matters.

And at this time, suddenly a clap of thunder sounded from outside the main hall. Silver radiance brightened the entire Deer city, and the gloomy clouds instantly disappeared. An indescribable energy undulated and engulfed the space between Heaven and Earth.

Then, the Ye family mansion began quaking and shaking.

“What’s happening? Could it be the Earth dragon turning over?”

“Quickly go to the courtyard, this building is about to collapse.....”

Everyone had pale faces. The main hall began violently shaking. Tiles began falling and cracks appeared on a pillar to the west.

In the first instant, ye Qingyu transformed into a shadow, his inner yuan activated. Everyone in the main hall, including Qin Lan, Little Grass, and several dumbfounded female servants was brought outside by him.

## Chapter 096 – The Female Sword Immortal, Wang Jianru

---

Within the courtyard, everyone was still in a panicked state.

The violent shaking of the ground stopped. In reality, that fierce vibration had only lasted for a second.

“Just what is happening?” Qin Lan embraced Little Grass. This was her first time seeing such a great commotion. Many people were affected and frightened by this, rushing out from their rooms. There was an old servant that had managed to fall and break his scalp in his panic. Apart from this, there were not any other major injuries.

Everyone was still in a panicked state.

Ye Qingyu lifted his head to look at the sky, his gaze becoming serious.

It was not an earthquake.

Nor was it the wrath of heavens.

Within the air, there were martial experts fighting.

In the gloomy air, black clouds roiled, as if the galaxy had flipped around. It nearly enveloped the entire Deer city below. Within the black clouds, there were streaks after streaks of silver lightning constantly

piercing the cloud layer. Terrifying yuan qi turbulence roiled through the world. The black clouds surged like the layer of the sea, with an indescribable terror and strangeness.

They could only see the aura but the not the people.

They were true experts of the martial way.

Under the activation of their inner yuan, through their will, they could hide the skies and cover the earth, flipping the heavens and trampling on the oceans. They were like gods.

Boom!

The sound like the collapse of a mountain sounded in the air.

Within Deer city, many people felt as if a fierce steel hammer was struck next to their ears. The vibration caused blood to leak from their nose and mouth, the horrifying sound waves as if they were physical objects. Transparent pattern emanated throughout the air, destroying all.

Ye Qingyu's heart madly pulsated as he watched.

A frightening power.

Even though Deer city was within the borders of Snow county it could at least be counted as a city important for military affairs. There were a five thousand strong army of the Snow country's elite, and within the

different areas of the city there were the reinforcement of formations. Although it could not be said to be as protected as a wall made of metal and surrounded by a moat of boiling water<sup>1</sup>, it was at least highly defended. It had always been forbidden for martial experts to fly above Deer city.

But at this time, both parties that were in the midst of battle in the air, not only flew above Deer city but also fought and struck out. The ripples from the battle nearly enveloped the entire Deer city. In some places within the city, cracks had begun to appear and buildings started to collapse.

What kind of person, would be so uncaring about the consequences?

The reason that the Ye mansion was shuddering and the buildings were beginning to fracture, was due to the energy waves from the two fighting within the air. Thankfully they only exchanged blows for a short instant, or else there would be injuries and death that would be hard to control within the mansion.

At this time, everyone within Deer city looked above in the skies in shock and fear.

In the mansions of some noble families, the structures already began to emit different colours of light/ Like a forcefield covering these different mansions it prevented the terrifying energy ripples from spreading past this barrier – this was a sign that their rune formations had activated.

In the direction of the White Deer academy, there were dazzling multi coloured light beams, everyone one of them tens of metre wide. At the

same time, from different directions around the academy, these beams soared from the different structures as if they were madly dancing dragons in the air. Entwining together, it combined together hundreds of metre high into a light shield, protecting the entire White Deer academy within.

Sacred formation protection!

This was the strongest formation that the White Deer academy possessed. From the beginning of the academy, this was created by the Gongfeng\* organisation of the royal family. In these sixty years since it was placed, it had undergone countless renovations and changes. It had gone through four or five generations of formation geniuses that the academy had cultivated themselves, reinforcements and improvements constantly being made. This was a formation that was the consolidated efforts of countless people. It was said that it could withstand directly the full power strike of someone of the Bitter Sea stage and above.

“Don’t run everywhere. Gather together within the courtyard, don’t panic!”

Ye Qingyu used the brass heroic badge to activate the formation protection of the Ye mansion – of course , this only reinforced the structure of the buildings. It did not have a similar effect as the noble families, with energy forcefields formation surrounding them.

After arranging everything, Ye Qingyu’s figure flashed, jumping directly on the highest roof of the entire mansion.

After seeing the reactions of the White Deer academy, Ye Qingyu

realised that the situation was even more serious than he had imagined.

After jumping higher, he discovered that in the Northern military barracks, there were rays after rays of yuan qi light soaring in the sky. Similar to fire beacons lingering in the air, the scarlet red covered the entire military barracks. Evidently the experts within the army had also released their own power and the formation of the army had begun to activate.

The factions within the city, was as if they were facing a great enemy.

“Just what has happened?”

Ye Qingyu was completely confused.

Vaguely, he suddenly thought back to the words of Wang Yan. That there would be big things that were going to happen within the city...could it be that this was what she meant? The two parties that were fighting, just who were they? Even the different factions within the city only defended, why did they not come out and stop this battle?

Xiu!

Within the air, a ray of sword light shone.

Ye Qingyu's eyes burned with a radiance in this moment, his entire consciousness submerged into this sword light.

A hard to describe sword.

A sword that could seize Heaven and Earth.

A sword that exceeded the thoughts of countless people of the martial path.

He could only see the roiling black clouds, as if they were paper thin, be destroyed by this terrifying sword strike that could cut apart Heaven and Earth. It sliced apart these clouds directly through the middle, then like a whale absorbing water, the black clouds completely dispersed.

At this moment, countless people had a sensation ——

As if the sky itself was sliced apart by this sword strike.

The cloud layers disappeared.

The snow had all fallen.

The originally inky black sky, suddenly became clear. They were a dazzling blue from the entire sky, not even a shred of a cloud left to be seen. The golden colour of the sun shone from the flat line in the west, raising the temperature of the coldness of these past days in Deer city. It was as if spring had returned.

The battle temporarily ended.

“Wang Jianru, you’ve really managed to master the [Splitting heaven sword will]” A incomparably shocked voice sounded out from a black ray of light, reverberating through the city. “Haha, but this time you can’t manage to kill me. I will return, I won’t just give up. The girl of darkness has already appeared in Deer city, her blood has been awakened. No one can block us, what does it matter if we slaughter the entire Deer city? Hahaha!”

Before he had finished.

The black ray of light disappeared in the South west direction.

But this arrogant and domineering voice, as if it was the clap of thunder, reverberated throughout the skies, not fading for a long time.

The terrifying ripples left by this battle stilled fluctuated within the skies. As if it was a heavy ancient mountain, it pressed down, stifling the hearts of everyone. Even if it was a normal person who did not practice the martial way, they felt their breathing becoming difficult. A suffocating sensation that caused the hearts to fill with fear.

Ye Qingyu still looked up at the skies.

Not only Ye Qingyu. In this instant, countless martial experts were still staring into the sky.

Because with the skies, there was one person with long hair and caressing a sword floating in the air.

A woman.

A woman wearing a mask.

Her black coloured long hair flowed with the wind. Her silver mask was like flowing quicksilver on her face. She had a palace white long dress. Lowering her head, her left hand dainty like jade, she lightly held the long sword in her hand that was shining with light. As if she was thinking of something, or as if she was remembering something. As if she was a mysterious lone fairy.

The wind blew past.

The dress moved but the person did not. An indescribable elegance.

This female immortal, was one of the parties of that great battle. She was the person that ultimately sliced apart the roiling black clouds.

His mind flickered with the images of that battle that shook the heavens. Ye Qingyu's heart was filled with shock but also a hard to suppress excitement. There was a inexpressible stimulation given to Ye Qingyu by this fight, as if it was a battle between deities and devils. He swore silently, that there would be a day, that he would also reach such a level.

The next instant——

The space in the skies seemed to distort slightly, then everything returned to normal.

The female immortal, Wang Jianru's figure disappeared, nowhere to be seen.

The battle that had shaken the entire Deer city, that had made every faction feel as if they were facing a great enemy, ended just like that.

Ye Qingyu looked around everywhere before jumping back down. He could see that the radiance from all directions had disappeared, the different formations having stop functioning. Looking in the Northern military leader, he could see that the beacon like lights were dispersing, the army formation also stopping....

The atmosphere of hostility gradually faded.

From the surface ,it was as if everything within White Deer city had become peaceful again.

But Ye Qingyu was clear in his heart, that the waves caused by this battle had just begun.

The white dressed Wang Jianru, just who was she?

And the person who had lost, that black ray of light, just who was he?

Before leaving, the black ray of light had revealed too much information. This was a heavy information that was enough to shake the entire Deer mountain range

Questions after question was asked in Ye Qingyu's heart. Jumping down from the roof, he returned to the mansion.

“Little Yu...” Qin Lan and the others looked at Ye Qingyu nervously.

Ye Qingyu gave them a smile. “It's nothing, its only a struggle between the great people, it has nothing to do with us. Everyone has no need to worry, just go back to what you were doing. Today I have to celebrate Aunt Lan's birthday, everyone quickly go prepare. Even if the sky falls down, there will be people taller than us to support it. There are over a hundred noble families within the cities with an army numbering over the thousands. If someone dares to cause trouble within the city, they will definitely be slaughtered by the army.

The servants quickly dispersed, rushing to prepare the birthday feast.

After speaking with Qin Lan and Little Grass, Ye Qingyu returned to his own little courtyard and began training.

The nameless breathing technique, was Ye Qingyu's homework that could not be budged.

Nourishing his own body, absorbing yuan qi of Heaven and Earth, nurturing the three Spirit springs within his desert world was the most foundation method of the martial way.

Practicing techniques but not training your foundation was something extremely ill advised. In the end, all would become futile.

No matter how great the battle technique, it needed the foundation of a strong inner yuan.

Without a strong inner yuan, even if a divine battle technique was in front of you, it was only the reflection of the moon on water.

Ye Qingyu once again entered into a familiar state.

And at this time, the silly dog Big Head had awakened. Wriggling from Ye Qingyu's embrace and seeing that Ye Qingyu was training, he did not disturb him. He began inspecting the little courtyard, sniffing and smelling every little thing. Who knows what he was looking for, he seemed curious about everything.....

-----

1. term for talented people that organisations liked to keep around ↵

## Chapter 097 – The Curses Emitting From The Taoxuan Pavillion

---

Nothing else happened today.

The entire Ye family mansion that night was in the midst of celebration. Tang San had arranged the birthday feast very well; although it could not be counted as extravagant, but everyone in the mansion could share in the joy. Everyone was able to sense the special treatment Ye Qingyu lavished upon the Qin mother and daughter, completely treating them as the masters of this mansion.

Lanterns began to be lit.

The people who had celebrated for half the day began to disperse.

In the main hall, there were only Ye Qingyu and Tang San.

Seeing the unhappy expression of the young master, the head supervisor Tang San knew deeply that Ye Qingyu was in a bad mood from being forcefully held behind by him. But as the head supervisor, he knew that there were some matters that needed the personal confirmation of Ye Qingyu before it could be done. He must explain in detail the properties of the Ye family to Ye Qingyu.

Under the oil lamp.

Tang San patiently and earnestly explained.

Ye Qingyu yawned, waving his hand. “I’m really tired, isn’t it just someone causing trouble at the properties. I’ll accompany you tomorrow to have a look. Those people with no eyes, if they’re really looking to die, then I’ll crush them....Fine, are you satisfied now?”

Tang San painfully smiled.

No matter what the group there would be struggles in the beginning. Ye Qingyu when taking back the Murong Shop, Lianfeng smithery and Taoxuan pavilion could be said that these properties were returning to their rightful owner. But without the stabilisation effect of Luo Jin and the others, the surrounding forces began to show indications of acting out. Where there was people, there would be conflict. These properties began to receive the challenge and provocation of others.

Even if it was not a direct confrontation, even if they hid and did things behind the scenes, it would be troublesome. It was enough for a person with zero experience like Tang San to become troubled.

After Ye Qingyu had regained these properties, Tang San had managed to largely sort the business relationships out. But the business of these properties, could not be compared to what they were previously. Apart from the movement of employees, another factor contributing to this was due the sabotage of several other competing companies.

“I’ve also discovered, that the character of Luo Jin and the others did not change. Under the support of some noble families, they are hiding behind them and conducting quite a lot of bad deeds against us. These people were once the managers of these properties and are familiar with

the situation. We must prepare to defend ourselves.” Tang San said enigmatically.

Ye Qingyu continuously yawned. “Fine, fine. They are just a couple of clowns, tomorrow I’ll settle them all at once.”

Seeing Ye Qingyu’s absent minded countenance, Tang San felt as if he had punched into cotton, powerless and with no way to exert force. Experiencing more things meant that he had greater awareness of the whole situation. Tang San currently clearly understood to what extent the waters within Deer city had been muddied. Inwardly the factions and forces were tied together in twisted roots and intertwined joints, forming countless links. Tang San was slightly worried, that Ye Qingyu’s careless attitude would be utilised against him by some craft and cunning old fellows.

“Since young master already has a plan in his heart, then I’ll first leave.” Tang San said helplessly.

Ye Qingyu nodded his head, about to say goodnight then suddenly thought of something. Beckoning with his hand: “That’s right, Little San have you heard of the [Mist residence] in the southern district before?”

Tang San thought over this carefully, then shook his head.

“Tomorrow send some people to find out about this place.” Ye Qingyu was planning something.

Tang San nodded, turning to leave.

Ye Qingyu suddenly said again. “Leave it, don’t send people. This matter, just pretend you haven’t heard of it.”

“I understand.” Tang San was taken aback but did not ask why, turning to leave.

Under the pale yellow light of the lamp, Ye Qingyu sat on the chair, holding his chin deep in thought.

Since Wang Yan had warned him to not involve himself into the conflict, then this represented that danger would appear. His relationship with Wang Yan in the academy could not be counted as intimate, but this head teacher of the first year had time and time again taken care of him. If he entered into this vortex, then perhaps there were some people that were currently secretly observing him.

If he allowed Tang San to investigate the [Mist residence], then there was a possibility of involved the Ye mansion into this matter.

After considering for a bit, Ye Qingyu decided to personally investigate that area by himself.

Returning to the [Determination garden], Ye Qingyu continued to train.

The yuan qi within the courtyard began to converge without any signs or sound.

.....

.....

The second day.

As Ye Qingyu's dawn training ended, Qin Lan had already prepared the morning meal. She directed a female servant to bring hot water, and after demon king Ye had washed, everyone joyously finished breakfast. Little Grass went to the Taoxuan pavilion to practice martial arts.

There were approximately six months till the next time that White Deer academy would recruit students. The foundation of Little Grass was weak, therefore she must put in an even greater effort than other people. The little girl had experienced hardship before, so she was determined and resolute in becoming a martial artist like brother Qingyu. She was especially enthusiastic. Everyday without the need from a reminder from Qin Lan, she went by herself to train in the Taoxuan pavilion, extremely hard working.

After they had finished breakfast, Tang San arrived.

Ye Qingyu changed into a new pair of clothes. Both of them left the Ye mansion and headed to survey and inspect the Ye properties around them.

After the battle had ended, another layer of snow had landed within the city. Floating snow was still descending from the skies, and the thickness of the snow was enough to swallow someone's knee. Thankfully

on the main road, the accumulated snow had been tidied. The places that had not been cleaned were trodden on till they were like ice. The snow did not melt, making it seem as if the city was much more cleaner.

Everywhere they looked, the scenery was wrapped in a plain unadorned silver white. The city was particularly beautiful.

There were not many people on the streets.

Perhaps it was the battle in the skies that had caused too great a shock. Normal people did not dare to appear on the various paths. On the contrary to this, the soldiers of the army patrols were often seen. Their numbers seemed much more greater than usual. On the way, Ye Qingyu and Tang San, in less than half an hour of time, had already passed five or six squadrons. Their blades and spears were glimmering with light, heavily armoured, as if they were about to face their greatest foe.

Ye Qingyu was also interrogated by several of these patrols.

Thankfully due to the nameplate of the White Deer academy, it was easily solved.

In the entire afternoon, Ye Qingyu under the direction of Tang San, first went to inspect Murong shop, Heavenly fragrance restaurant and the Miaoyu temple. He finally had a clear understanding of these properties.

The Murong shop mainly operated in the business of tea leaves, Dim Sum and fabric. He did not know what his father was thinking, the areas

of this business was disorganised and chaotic. It seemed more like a general store. Heavenly fragrance was a wine shop and a restaurant. And as for the Miaoyu temple, it mainly operated in jade tools and jade accessories. These three average sized shops, each of them had around five employees to look after it. Although the business could not be counted as spectacular, as the land was owned by the Ye family, there was no need to pay rent. They could barely manage to maintain a situation where they made neither a profit nor a loss.

Ye Qingyu was completely ignorant in regards to these businesses. He only showed himself to heighten morale.

After an entire morning of watching flowers from horseback<sup>1</sup>, they had only managed to go through three properties.

During the time of noon, finally more and more people began appearing on the streets.

After eating something in the Heavenly fragrance restaurant, Tang San brought Ye Qingyu to the Taoxuan pavilion.

Taoxuan pavilion was a martial arts dojo. In the past, Ye Qingyu's mother had personally taught and accepted students and this establishment was exceptionally prosperous. It was enough for it to place in the top three of the Northern district. It was said that there were quite a few who had come to challenge the dojo and every single one of them was beaten till they returned from where they came from. The fame of the [Hundred flower sword] also expanded as a result of this.

It could be said that this dojo was crystallised effort of Ye Qingyu's

mother.

It was a pity that after Ye Qingyu's parents had died in the battle to safeguard the city, without the stabilisation effect of an expert, the business of the dojo fell over a thousand metres. Afterwards, Nie Yan extorted and schemed the business away and managed to occupy the Taoxuan pavilion. But although he was crafty, his strength could not be compared at all to Ye Qingyu's mother. Taoxuan pavilion did not regain its former radiance.

Ye Qingyu stood at the entrance to the Taoxuan pavilion.

He slowly lifted his head to look.

The willow doors nailed up by the copper nails were brushed black, dignified and solemn. The personally written words of Ye Qingyu's father 'Taoxuan pavilion' were hung on a board above. After experiencing so many years of wind and rain, the sign already emitted an atmosphere where great changes had occurred and was mottled in appearance. And on both sides of the gate, was a low wall that was said to be personally constructed by Ye Qingyu's father. In the time of summer, it was crawling with moss but now it was covered in white snow.

The location of the martial arts dojo was in the outskirts, but it occupied nearly thirty acres of space. The little practice grounds was surrounded by clay walls, around twenty acres. Behind that, was the martial hall of the Taoxuan pavilion and several other buildings.

Out of all the properties that he owned, Ye Qingyu was most sentimental towards the Taoxuan pavilion.

Because when he was small, his mother had often brought him here.

Every grass and wood here, every stone and tile, would make Ye Qingyu remember the joyous days where his parents were beside him.

But namely for this reason, Ye Qingyu very rarely appeared here.

He did not want to recall the memories of his parents' death.

In this short period of time, Ye Qingyu was silently standing in front of the entrance of the Taoxuan pavilion. After participating in the grand competition in the [Boundary canyon battlefield], he had always felt a stifling pressure in his mood. Perhaps it was the despicable actions Xia Houwu, perhaps it was the academy's reaction that made him disappointed, perhaps it was the worry over the little loli, or perhaps it was seeing this scenery that made him remember his passed away parents.....

In the end, Ye Qingyu could not discern why he felt this way.

Ye Qingyu felt like he was a volcano about to erupt.

And at this time, Ye Qingyu could hear, behind the black doors there was sounds of intense fighting, indistinct curses and cries....

The colour of Tang San's face, instantly changed.

Ye Qingyu did not say anything, entering.

Behind the wall on the brick little practice grounds, two groups of people were facing off.

There were around five or six people in one group, wearing red coloured armour and posturing in an imposing and violent manner. They had an aggressive appearance and should be people of respectable strength. The person leading them was a sixteen or seventeen young man. Oily head and a powdered face, the smell of cosmetics enough to assault someone's nostrils. He had a jade folding fan in his hand, extreme arrogance between his eyebrows and a cold smile on his face.

Opposite.

The other crowd was evidently much shabbier, with disorganised clothing and the majority with patches.

“Sun Yuhu, just what is the meaning of this? Why have you allowed people to injure junior brother Wang?” A young man with coarse clothing loudly shouted in rage.

Next to him, several young people were supporting an injured man around twenty years of age. His chest had been struck, the palm print evident. His chest had directly sunken in, and blood flowed from his nose and mouth. His injuries were not light, and he had already fainted with a weak vitality.

“Haha, it was decided it was a spar so one must therefore use their full

efforts. Within battle, blades and spears have no eyes. Since my people have injured Wang Ying by mistake, this can only be blamed on the fact that his skills are not enough.” The powdered face of the young man, Sun Yuhu had contempt, not caring in the slightest.

“You...we agreed we would stop at first contact. You intentionally did this, this is too much.” The coarse clothed young man’s face turned red.

-----

1. Observing but not doing anything ↵

## Chapter 098 – One Must Pay For A Murder With Their Life

---

Sun Yufu shot a warning glare at Ye Qingyu and Tang San. With a gaze filled with provocation, he evaluated both of them up and down. Waving his hands: “Eh, there’s really two people here that wants to learn from you guys? There is still people coming to study from such a ragged dojo? Are you two idiots? Quickly scam, if I see you coming here again then I’ll break your legs apart.”

Ye Qingyu did not speak.

He expressionlessly went towards the young injured man that everyone was supporting.

“Sigh, not listening to my advice. It seems that this little thing did not place any importance on my words. Hey, Lu Qiang, go and persuade this little brat who has no eyes...” Seeing that Ye Qingyu completely ignored him, Sun Yufu became angry and gave a sign to the burly man wearing red armour next to him. He placed heavy emphasis on the words ‘persuade’.

Lu Qiang quickly understood his meaning.

The stout man cracked his fingers, his armour clanking and squeaking. With a sinister smile, he walked towards Ye Qingyu, glaring at him with warning from high above. Coldly smiling, “Little kid, you refuse a toast but is forced to drink in the end<sup>1</sup>, you....”

Ye Qingyu's hand slapped out.

Pak !

Accompanied by the crisp and clear slapping sound, the muscular man around one metre and ninety centimetres tall could not even react. He suffered the full force of the strike, half his face swollen up like a pig's head. Like a kite whose string had been cut, he rotated in mid air, landing on the other side of the earthen wall.

There were cold gasps of shock.

The contempt and uncaring expression gradually faded from Sun Yuhu's face.

“You...who are you?”

He stealthily took a step backwards, retreating until he was amongst his crowd of guards.

Ye Qingyu did not reply to his words but walked in front of the person that was injured. He placed his palm on the young man's chest, sensing, then his face darkened. The injury he had sustained was extremely malicious. It seemed as if it was only a palm strike on the surface, but in reality a hidden force had been emitted that destroyed the inner organs of this young man. Even if there was Spirit medicine or the like, this young man's injuries could not be healed. The dead could not be brought back to life.

“Is he a student of Taoxuan pavilion?”

Ye Qingyu stood up, looking at another youth with coarse clothing.

This young man hesitated for a bit.

“This is our young master, he’s not a outsider. Lin Tian, if your young master ask, then just answer.” Tang San quickly introduced Ye Qingyu’s identity. He could faintly feel that Ye Qingyu’s mood was not particularly well. He feared that this Taoxuan pavilion student would incite Ye Qingyu’s anger.

The young person called Lin Tian was slightly taken aback.

He had long heard of the fact that the Taoxuan pavilion had returned to the Ye family. But this new young master was extremely mysterious, and had never appeared before them in these past days. The students with the dojo had no idea what the young master looked like with absolutely no impression of him. But for many students the changes occurring within the dojo, could be counted as a fortunate occurrence so they had positive feelings towards this new master.

Seeing him today, who would have guessed that the young master would be a teenager that was fresh and inexperienced.

“So it was the young master.” Lin Tian clasped his hands in greeting, then said: “We are the students of Taoxuan pavilion, this is junior brother Wang Ying.” He pointed at the young man who had already been placed onto a stretcher by the other people.

“Haha, I wondered who was it that was so impressive. So it’s the new master of this dojo.” After hearing these words, Sun Yuhu seemed to have thought of something, his expression becoming much more free and relaxed. “Interesting. But do you know, the person you have slapped, is a person from the [Capture barracks] of the north. Haha, you are going to be trouble.....” ,

The colour of everyone’s face changed.

Ye Qingyu did not turn his head to look at Sun Yuhu. Asking Lin Tian again, “Who injured brother Wang Ying?”

Lin Tian hesitated for a moment, then pointed at another scarlet red armoured man next to Sun Yuhu.

Ye Qingyu nodded his head. “I know. Quickly go find a doctor, and use the best medicine.....Don’t be afraid to spend money. Every expense will be paid by me.”

Lin Tian instantly became overjoyed. “Thank you young maser.”

The students of the Taoxuan pavilion were not really formal disciples. Only when they were free, would they come to the dojo to train their bodies and practice martial arts, learning some techniques to defend against thieves and other small problems. The aim of their study was only to not be bullied by others, so strictly speaking they were not the true students of Taoxuan pavilion. According to the rules of the big dojos of the Northern district, these so called students had to pay for nearly every expense. Even if they were injured in a spar, they had to pay for the

injuries themselves.

For a young man that originated from the poor, if he was injured in a spar and wanted to recover, the expenditure was absolutely shocking. Good medicine for treating injuries was expensive. It was enough to plunge his entire family in a dire situation.

Who would have thought the new master would be so generous.

Originally Link Tian and tens of other part time students had already devised a plan to raise money for Wang Ying's injuries. They did not think that the new master would appear and promise to bear the expenses of the injuries. It seemed like the character of this new master was not too bad.

Ye Qingyu gradually turned around, his gaze regarding Sun Yuhu and the others.

He beckoned at the scarlet red armour muscular man Lin Tian had just pointed out.

The burly man laughed slightly, then walked step by step towards him. He stood in front of Ye Qingyu, blowing a breath of hot air right into Ye Qingyu's face and then spat a goblet of saliva next to Ye Qingyu's leg. Contemptuously, he coldly said: "What is it? Little brat, you want to take revenge for the poor little ants? Haha, you really don't know how high the heavens is or how deep the earth goes. I am of the capture barracks, if you dare to even harm me in the slightest, you...."

Before he had finished.

Ye Qingyu struck out again.

In the time of a spark, he unsheathed the sword that the burly man wore at his waist. A cold light flickered. Before the others could even react, the sword flickered with a swish in Ye Qingyu's hand, as if it had come alive. In a split second, it revolved around the head of the muscular man, then once again returned to Ye Qingyu's hand.

“A good sword!”

Ye Qingyu flicked the body of the blade, and the hum of the sword resounded throughout.

The cutting edge of the blade trembled.

At first, everyone was confused. They could only see Ye Qingyu once again placing back the sword into the muscular man's waist.

Puchi!

A streak of blood red spurted out from the neck of the burly man.

This jet of blood, instantly made the hearts of many people sink down to the valley floor.

The muscular man fearfully touched his neck, sensing the icy hand of the death god that was choking his neck. Drop by drop, it was rending his life force away from him. His identity as an soldier of the capture barracks made him proud and was the reason for his arrogance. But even this could not cause life to return to his body.

Fear and regret, completely overwhelmed him like the tide rushing in.

He look towards the silhouette of the calm and collected youth, his vision gradually blurring.

“One must pay for murder with their own life. A debt that they owe, they must pay back. No matter what the time or era, these two phrases will forever be the theme of this world.” Ye Qingyu stood calmly within the courtyard, enunciating each word clearly. “It was originally a spar, to be stopped at first touch. But you chose to kill someone because you feel you are the stronger person. You chose to act without thinking of the consequences. But you forget, according to your logic, that people who are stronger than you, can also kill you....”

Silence fell around the ground.

The body of the burly man fell.

He had destroyed the meridians of the Wang Ying. Under Ye Qingyu's observation, he knew that Wang Ying could not live for much longer. He must pay the price for his murder with his own life.

“Crazy, you've gone crazy, you've absolutely gone crazy.....” After being

dumbfounded for a period of time, Sun Yuhu, like a alarmed chicken, began sharply screeching.

“Criminal. Everyone rush together, kill him.”

“Trash, to dare kill someone of the capture barracks, you’re looking to die!”

The leftover soldiers wearing the scarlet red armour of the capture barracks acted. After a slight hesitation, their first reaction was not fear but rage that rushed into their temples. They took out the swords at their waist and surrounded Ye Qingyu. The cold light of the swords glimmered, like the floating snow in the sky. A chilling atmosphere prevailing throughout, they attacked.

“Although you did not kill anyone yet, but you have assisted him in his oppression.”

Ye Qingyu did not move from where he stood. He extended two fingers, inner yuan activating, clamping onto the incoming sword blade. Activating his inner yuan, the skin between the soldier’s thumb and finger ripped apart. Screaming for Ye Qingyu to let go, the soldier was sent flying backwards.

Holding this sword in his hand, Ye Qingyu aimlessly swiped it about.

Without any technique or method.

The shadows of the sword was disordered.

But it was extremely fast.

Ping!Ping!Ping!Ping!

The surrounding soldiers of the capture barrack could only feel an impact on the chest. Then, their mouth opened and jets of blood flew out. The impact sent them flying backwards, falling to the floor. They struggled to get up, but their body was completely powerless. They could not even crawl back up to a standing position.

Sun Yuhu's face tragically changed. Not even emitting a single sound, he turned and ran towards the exit.

Ye Qingyu only gave him a glance, but did not stop him.

Tang San wanted to say something. His lips parted, but he ultimately did not say anything.

“Open the doors wide. I'll wait here and see just what kind of reinforcement that effeminate man can find.” Ye Qingyu sat with his feet wide apart, on the steps of the practice stage of the Taoxuan pavilion. He said to Tang San, “I suddenly want to drink some alcohol, go send someone to buy some.”

Tang San hurriedly directed someone to purchase alcohol.

“Where are the teachers of the dojo?”

“The original teachers were Nie Yan’s people. When Nie Yan left, he brought these people away with him.” Tang San came over, “There is only Master Zhou who stayed, and it was him who taught these students in these past days. I’ve already asked Lin Tian. Master Zhou brought Little Grass to purchase training equipment and he still hasn’t returned.”

As he said these, there were several part time students that came stumbling over with pale faces. They stuttered, saying that they had some matters in their families that they needed to be taken care of and that they needed to return.

“You....are you guys afraid?” Lin Tian said, his face red. He pointed his finger at them in blame.

Ye Qingyu waved his hand. “Those who wants to go, can go. This will prevent the matters of today affecting you. I can understand the thinking of everyone. I won’t blame you.”

“Young master, we are not afraid to die. Our life is cheap and is not worth much. But the way Sun Yufu does things is poisonous and malicious, we really are afraid that he’ll drag our family into this. My child has just reached one full month, and my mother is lying sick in her bed, I...” A young man spoke with an ashamed appearance.

Everyone lowered their heads.

YE Qingyu smiled, his attitude extremely amiable. “I really don’t blame anyone. From today onwards, if Taoxuan pavilion does not fall, then we welcome everyone to come back...just go.”

Tens of so called students left, the majority having departed.

Finally there were only Lin Tian and two other youths around the ages of eighteen or nineteen. Evidently they were nervous, conflict in their eyes, but ultimately they forced themselves to stand behind Ye Qingyu.

Ye Qingyu still did not say anything.

A short time later, alcohol had arrived.

The snowflakes drifting from the sky had become greater and greater, more and more concentrated. Cold glimmers completely covered the sky, like the drifting petals from a thousand trees.

The sound of footsteps came.

A white haired old man and a little girl. They came in from the entrance.

The old man had silver hair, but a rosy light in his cheeks, evidently still possessing superb vitality. He was gasping for breath, holding onto his walking stick and white mist came from his silver white head. Evidently he had ran too fast, causing him to overheat. The little girl was as if she was carved from jade, like a fairy on the snowy ground. Beads of sweat dripped from her forehead, and she carried a medicine box around the same size as her. She was also breathing roughly.

-----

1. hesitate to do something until they are forced to do it ↵

## Chapter 099 – A Spear

---

Ye Qingyu gave him a glance. Wasn't this the old doctor, Li Shizen?

Previously in the Ye mansion when he had found someone to treat Qin Lan's injuries, this doctor had left a deep impression with Ye Qingyu. He did not expect that they would meet again today. They really had been brought together again by fate.

“Where's the injured person?”

It seems that Li Shizen had hurried here and ran. After standing straight for several breaths of time to recover and pant, he finally managed to calm his breathing down. Wiping away his sweat, he saw the six soldiers of the Capture barracks lying on the ground. This did not cause too much shock in his face and a calm expression was present throughout.

Tang San quickly rushed over and greeted him, bringing him to the Wang Ying lying on the stretcher.

The little girl with braided hair also panted after him carrying the medicinal box.

Ye Qingyu silently sat on the snow covered steps.

Tang San came over beside Ye Qingyu's ear. He went over the background of Sun Yufu with a suppressed voice.

So the powdered face of that pretty boy, was the foster son of the Liu Yuancheng of the government office. Together with the Liu Lei that had already died in Ye Qingyu's hand, they used to get up to all sorts of evil within the city. Using their position to bully others, they did small things from oppressing others tyrannically to murder and arson. Within the city, they were known as 'one wolf and one Bei<sup>1</sup>'. They had done far too many actions that offended Heaven and reason.

After Liu Lei had died at Ye Qingyu's hands, Liu Yuancheng had lost his only son. Under his sorrow, he brought Sun Yufu to be raised within his residence, adopting him and doting on him even more. As a result of this, Sun Yufu became even more arrogant and wilful and was one of the calamities of this city.

During these past days, for some reason, Sun Yufu had arrived at the Northern district and schemed together with several camps of the Northern military office. He incited and provoked trouble at every opportunity. Who knows what kind of wind was blowing today, that he had come to the Taoxuan pavilion.

After hearing everything, Ye Qingyu still did not open his mouth.

He grabbed a jar of wine, unplugging the cover and the fragrant wine instantly wafted out. His inner yuan activated and with a slight suction, the aquamarine water became a jet stream, shooting out from the jar of wine into his mouth. This caused the smell of alcohol to permeate the air.

The wine that Tang San had sent people to buy was definitely good alcohol.

Ye Qingyu fiercely drank a large gulp.

A fiery spiciness entered into his body, and he could feel a hotness in his chest. It was as if if he only needed to open his mouth to breath fire.

And at this time, there were the sounds of ordered footsteps resounding from outside.

Ta!Ta!Ta!Ta!

Waves after waves of footsteps, as if they were ordered drum beats, sounded in an extreme rhythm. As if the earth was shaking, as if they was a terrifying huge beast rushing towards them. It got nearer and nearer, and they could even hear the clink of the metallic armour. A fierce atmosphere was heading towards them.

Within the air, there was an aura of tenseness.

Worry could not help but appear on Tang San's face.

Lin Tian and his two comrades only felt their throats drying up and their calf muscles beginning to cramp up.

Undoubtedly, this was Sun Yufu bringing people here for revenge. Very possibly, these were the elite soldiers of the capture barracks, true killing machines. They were different from normal mercenaries and gangs, once the machinery of soldiers operate, it could completely crush everything in

its path.

Very quickly, the flood of footsteps stopped in front of the door.

Boom !

The black willow door exploded, wood flying chaotically everywhere.

A neat ordered row of long spears under the protection of wooden shields gradually neared, and behind them were the soldiers wielding these spears. Red armour, red masks, an endless icy glare emitting from their pupils. Without the slightest trace of fluctuations or shakiness, as if they were just icy machines. Each soldier held a spear with one hand and a round shield with the other, forming a neat orderly squadron. They slowly neared, like a scarlet red city wall. Slow but unstoppable, they advanced crushingly towards them.

The metallic bloody killing aura overwhelmed them in an instant.

In an moment's time, beads of sweat dripped down from Tang San's forehead.

Ye Qingyu did not even lift his glance up a single bit.

He opened his mouth and sucked.

The beautiful wine in the jar, again transformed into an aquamarine jet of water, gushing into his mouth.

In one breath, he had drunk half the jar.

“Drinking wine like that, will hurt your body and waste the wine.” A voice came out from beside him. It was the white haired Li Shizen. After inspecting Wang Ying’s injuries, and taking care of the wounds, he came to the steps and spoke to Ye Qingyu.

“How are the injuries?” Ye Qingyu asked.

“You’ve already seen for yourself. You should be extremely clear on what the situation is like.” Li Shizen shook his head. “His organs are all injured and it is impossible to recover. You’ve already used your inner yuan to extend his last breath, but it cannot last longer than three days.”

“Even you can’t save him?” Ye Qingyu sighed in sorrow.

“Medicine and doctors cannot heal a death sickness. Only those fated can be saved.” Li Shizen stroked his white beard, “When a doctor treats a sickness, such is always so. When their life has snapped, I am powerless. I can only allow Qingqing to treat him simply. I guarantee that in these three days, he will die painlessly.”

Ye Qingyu nodded his head, and retreated back into his silent state.

When faced with the fierce and ominous soldiers of the capture barracks, this old doctor did not display the slightest trace of fear. In reverse to this, he had a calm and serene smile. This could not help but make Ye Qingyu evaluate him even more highly. This doctor Li really had

the manner of an old man that had separated himself from worldly affairs.

Qiang!Qiang!Qiang!Qiang!

The spears drummed on the shields, the clash of metal enough to make people's hearts palpitate.

The first three rows of the spears moved aside and a passage way appeared that allowed a person to walk through. The Sun Yufu who had swapped his clothing for armour stepped through and a two metre tall burly man followed behind him. He had black metal armour on, like a steel tower, and a killing aura swirling around him. He was like a towering divine statue coming closer step by step.

The moment this black tower burly man appeared, a pressure was evident on the grounds.

“It's him, its that little trash, that dared to kill people of the Capture barracks.....” The sharp pitched voice of Sun Yufu's throat sounded, pointed at Ye Qingyu and screeching.

The black armoured burly man coldly glanced at Ye Qingyu, then look towards the soldiers struggling to get up on the ground. He lightly waved his arm.

There were spear soldiers that came to support the six soldiers unconscious on the ground, bringing them away.

The towering burly man's palm moved, and a black steel shackle appeared within his hands.

This shackle was approximately three metres long, and was coiled around the hands of the burly man like a black python. The steel body of the shackle had dried bloodstains painted on the surface. And on the two ends of this chain, there were two sharp barbs, like the tongue from a poisonous stake. It caused one to shake with dread when seeing this.

Bang!

The towering black armoured man threw the shackles next to Ye Qingyu's foot.

“Do it yourself, and bind the soul stealing shackles behind your back and your hands. Then follow me to the Capture barracks.” The towering man's words were as if he was announcing judgement. Pausing for a moment, he coldly said again: “Don't feel lucky. As long as you obediently follow us, I can let go of your family and friends. If you dare resist, then I'll exterminate everyone that you know.”

A explosive rage and killing intent, permeated the air.

Ye Qingyu fiercely drank a mouthful of the beautiful wine and laughed. His palm sucked the black chain into his hands, and he touched it all over with his hands. Shaking his head, he said : “What kind of toy is this, that you would bring it out to threaten people....”

He clenched the shackles with both of his hand, not seeming exerting

that much force, and then this terrifying steel chain instantly transformed into scrap metal. As if an craftsman was kneading dough, he easily destroyed the chain then threw it on the stage. Landing with a bang, it suddenly made the hearts of everyone shake madly.

The colour of this towering man drastically changed. In his tiger like eyes, cold light exploded.

“When was it, that the kingdom’s soldiers defending the city, became the dogs that were privately raised by the nobles? That every dog and cat like character, could deploy as they want? When was it that they became thugs?” Ye Qingyu leaned against the platform, hugging the jar of wine, saying his words clearly and slowly.

“You little trash, you dare to be so arrogant in front of commander Zhang and dare act so recklessly.” Sun Yuhu hid beside the towering man, stamping his foot. Pointing at Ye Qingyu, he began to loudly curse at Ye Qingyu: “I’m telling you this, today you are dead for sure. Wait until you’ve been dragged into the Capture barracks, I will definitely make sport of you, making you unable to even beg for life and death!”

“Liu Yuancheng really is an idiot. His son that stirred up trouble everywhere died. Then he really adopted such a son that would invite disaster everywhere.” Ye Qingyu grabbed through the air.

A soldier of the capture barracks exhaled in shock. He could hold the scarlet red spear in his hands no longer, the spear flying out.

Ye Qingyu held the spear slightly. Without aiming or looking, he casually threw it out.

The long spear formed a long trajectory, with not a very fast speed that sailed towards Sun Yuhu.

Sun Yuhu was shocked, and instinctively wanted to retreat backwards. But then he realised he was under the many layers of protection of the soldiers of the capture barracks and the commander Zhang next to him was an expert of the martial way. There was completely no need to be afraid. Such a soft and weak spear throw definitely could not injure him.

Thinking of this, Sun Yuhu conversely did not retreat backwards anymore but rather took a step forwards to indicate his fearsomeness.

The towering commander coldly snorted and grabbed towards the incoming spear.

In his heart, he could already not determine Ye Qingyu's background anymore.

To casually knead the steel chain like dough, then this indicated that the strength of this youth was extremely strong. But this did not hold any threat towards him, because Zhang Hen had seen too many strong people in his life before. Even if he was not his opponent he was not afraid, because the people standing beside him were not only the capture barracks, but also the entire defending army of Deer city. But right now, this teenager, would dare to insult and abuse the Liu Yuancheng of the government office. This was a sign of many problems to come.

At this instant, Zhang Heng slightly regretted that he would bring people to help Sun Yuhu here in order to gain the favour of Liu

Yuancheng.

But at this moment, since Sun Yuhu was in danger, he could not abandon him.

As his hand stretched out, he had already managed to grab the icy cold spear.

Zhang Heng had confidence in his strength.

He had already planned, after receiving the spear strike of this youth, how he would handle the situation afterwards. But at this time, something that he had never thought would have happened occurred. The scarlet red spear suddenly rapidly rotated, as if inside it was a strong force that was currently exploding. It instantly shook off his hand.

“Shit ! ”

Zheng Hen shouted loudly in his heart.

The next instant——

“Ahhhh.....”

He could see Sun Yu with wide open eyes, convulsing in fear. The scarlet red spear had pierced through his left shoulder. The enormous force the spear brought sent him sailing backwards. After knocking over several soldiers, the spear finally landed with a boom, nailed Sun Yu on

an earthen wall tens of metres away.

-----

1. legendary wolf like creature, kind of like a hyena ↵

## Chapter 100 – Go Back And Ask

---

The body of the quivered and vibrated in the air.

Sun Yu was nailed alive to the wall.

Thankfully for him, this spear did not hit any of his vitals. It only pierced through his left shoulder without reaping his life away.

But the pain originating from his shoulder, made Sun Yuhu squeal in a high pitch, like a pig being slaughtered. Subconsciously, he crazily struggled and tore the wound open even further causing fresh blood to streak out. His eyes rolled over, the whites showing and fainting directly.

Huge shock was within the hearts of the soldiers of the capture barracks when they witnessed this scene.

The first row of the spear soldiers, already had the spears ready in their hands. They held the spears above their heads. This was a sign that they were about to be thrown. Once the long spears was thrown, the soldiers of the Capture barracks would be like a well oiled machine, beginning to do battle.

“Don’t act!”

The black armoured towering commander lifted his hand, shouting.

The movement of the soldiers instantly froze, as if they had become orderly statues.

Seeing this scene, Ye Qingyu could not help but sigh in admiration.

The capture barracks was the elite army of Deer city. This type of military discipline, really caused someone to feel a whole new level of respect for this group of soldiers. Swift like the wind, gentle like the forest, motionless like a mountain. It was a pity that such a squadron, would become thugs that nobles could casually deploy as they pleased.

“Who is your distinguished self?”

Zhang Heng stared at Ye Qingyu, his tone becoming much more mild.

Being in the army for so many years, he had experienced many turbulent situations before. Zhang Heng was absolutely a man with keen insight, able to determine whether a person was a true Buddha or a scarecrow. He could indistinctly sense, that the youth sitting on the steps of the stage was calm and composed, every movement expressing a heavy self confidence. This teenager was even more complicated than what his imagination.

Ye Qingyu laughed. “You followed Sun Yuhu to smash my property aggressively. The moment you came, you did not attach any importance to me, believing that you could definitely gobble me up. Before this, did you not ask who I am?”

Zhang Hen hesitated, not saying anything.

“My young master, comes from the White Deer academy. His name is Ye Qingyu.” Tang San suppressed the fear in his heart, stepping forward to answer this question.

Ye Qingyu?

Zhang Hen paused, faintly feeling that this name was somewhat familiar. After pondering for a while, he abruptly understood. Shock in his heart, he carefully evaluated Ye Qingyu from head to toe.

“That Ye Qingyu of White Deer academy?” Zhang Heng briefly nodded his head, his tone much warmer. “Your name has been known to me for a long time. So you really are Ye Qingyu. Fine, the things that happened today, was my mistake. I did not understand the reason thoroughly before coming here. I ask for young lord Ye not to take offense. From now on, I won’t get involved again, but....One soldier of the capture barracks had died. I fear that the Northern military office will come and investigate. Young lord Ye, be careful.”

Finishing what he had to say, he turned and left.

“Let’s go.”

Zhang Heng waved his hands. Hundreds of soldiers orderly retrieved their weapons. As if they were one entity, they turned and left like the tide, gradually disappearing.

Sun Yuhu like a dead dog that was supported by other people. Plucking

out the long spear stabbed into his body, the surrounding soldiers placed him onto a stretcher. The moment the spear was pulled out, pain caused him to regain consciousness. He struggled, groaning and whining, “Where is he? Where is that damn trash? Have you captured him? I need to kill him, I need to kill his entire family....”

Ye Qingyu lifted his hands. “Wait a moment.”

The footsteps of Zhang Heng stopped. He turned his head backwards: “what is it?”

And at this time, Sun Yuhu finally understood what the situation was like. The soldiers beside him was desperately restraining him. He instinctively turned backwards, seeing Ye Qingyu’s gaze like that of a blade. His heart instantly quivered. A hard to describe fear and terror overcame him. His mouth opened and a spurt of blood flew out, fainting again.

Ye Qingyu looked at the Sun Yuhu being carried away, his face filled with malevolence. Deep in his eyes, there was an unnoticed killing intent that flashed by.

Ye Qingyu pointed to the broken willow entrance: “Who smashed the doors? Compensate me.”

Zhang Heng suddenly felt like there were black lines on his else. He thought it was for some other reason that he had been stopped. Letting out a breath of relief, he took out an inter dimensional pouch and threw it into the hands of Tang San. “There is ten thousand gold here, to repay young lord Ye’s dojo door.”

The corners of Tang San's mouth twitched, turning his head to look at Ye Qingyu.

Ten thousand gold was enough to repair and replace a willow door ten thousand times over. This was a huge sum, far exceeding the value of the entrance. Holding this sum in his hand, was somewhat scalding for Tang San.

But Ye Qingyu's eyelids did not even move.

Tang San instantly became calm, accepting naturally and storing away the inter dimensional pouch.

Zhang Heng smiled, turning to leave again.

Who would have guessed that at this time, Ye Qingyu would open his mouth yet again. "Wait a moment."

Zhang Heng stopped his footsteps, his eyebrows frowning slightly. In his tiger like eyes there was a hint of anger, but he ultimately controlled his emotions. He turned around yet again and smiled: "What is it? Could it be that young lord Ye feels that ten thousand gold is not enough to repair the doors? If it is like this, then young lord Ye just say a price. I'll see if I, Zhang Heng and the brothers of the capture barracks can afford to compensate you for the entrance."

The meaning of his words, evidently hinted that Ye Qingyu was being slightly too greedy.

Tang San also sweated, feeling that his young master had really gone slightly too far.

Under the gaze of countless eyes, Ye Qingyu lightly shook his head.

“Then what is young lord Ye’s intention?” Zhang Heng opened his mouth.

Ye Qingyu took a large mouthful of alcohol, casually rubbing away the droplets of wine near his lips. He lightly tapped the jar of wine, as if he was pondering something. After a short while, he slowly exhaled an murky breath filled with the smell of alcohol.

He looked at Zhang Heng, a faint smile on his face. Slowly, “From the moment I’ve returned to the Ye mansion, I’ve already had several contact with the people of the Northern military office. It was not particularly cheerful. Our fate together is really not light. Therefore, could I trouble you to bring a message to your superior in the military office? Go ask him, does he really want to go against the widows and orphans of the Ye family? Is the heroic brass badge, really in the eyes of the lord of the military office, scrap metal?”

Zhang Heng hesitated.

His expression, instantly became extremely embarrassed.

Zheng Heng looked at the indifferent calmness of this youth. He suddenly felt, that everything that Ye Qingyu did before, compared to this

expression of tranquillity and calmness, did not count as anything. Only at this moment could he sense the intensity of this youth from White Deer academy, could he sense the depths of this youth.

Zhang Heng abruptly felt, that he really shouldn't have come today.

He did not feel Ye Qingyu was that arrogant.

As if everything that occurred today was a matter of course for Ye Qingyu.

In truth, the moment he heard the name of this teenager, he had come to a realisation. Even if he was a commander of the capture barracks, even if his military position was not low, he did not possess the requirements to face this youth. In the entire Northern district, perhaps only the military general had the right to speak face to face with this youth.

An unyielding brass military badge. A grand competition that had spread out throughout the entire Deer city and even the entire mountain range. Without signs or sounds, it had already completely changed everything.

The wings of this youth had already been formed.

“I know, I will convey this to the military leader.”

Zhang Heng clasped his hands, retreating several steps. Then he turned around abruptly, and with a wave of his hands, the hundreds of

soldiers of the Capture barracks under his command retreated like the tide, disappearing in a distant corner far off in the street.

Within the air, the permeating tenseness and mutual hostility gradually dispersed.

Only until the last of the soldiers of the Capture barracks disappeared from his view, did Tang San let out a sigh of relief. He wiped the vast quantity of sweat from his brows while his heart drummed madly. Only after a while could he regain his composure.

Lin Tian and his two comrades, panted roughly and unevenly as if they were about to collapse. Excitement and stimulation they had never experienced before enveloped these three people. They stealthily looked towards the back of Ye Qingyu. The hearts of these three people were submerged with respect and curiosity towards the young master of the Taoxuan pavilion. One name was enough to make the Zhang Heng of the capture barracks lead his troops to retreat, what kind of power was this ?

Lin Tian clearly understood, that his choice today to stay behind was really too correct.

And at this time, around the short earthen walls of the Taoxuan pavilion, there were already quite a number of people gathered.

Every face, fat and slim, had every kind of marvellous and different expression. Curiosity and respect towards the teenager holding a jar of wine on the stage. The moment the conflict began, this news transferred through the district at the speed of a tornado. Coming from different areas all kinds of people gathered here, each holding a different aim, to

see the commotion.

Nearly everyone felt that the Taoxuan pavilion could not escape from this predicament.

In these years, the power of the army had been deeply imprinted within the hearts of everyone in Deer city. By and large, even if it was someone from an average noble family, they would not dare to offend the officers within the city. Especially for elite troops like the capture barracks, they could nearly go on a rampage without fearing the consequences.

At the instant the doors were broken down, some people laughed.

A group of people had already stealthily calculated and planned what would occur if the Taoxuan pavilion fell. Just what kind of benefits would they be able to gain? Such as from what kind of contact with the capture barracks could they use to repossess the land of the Taoxuan pavilion, using it for some other purpose. After all, the area that this land covered was not small. It had been a fatty piece of meat in the eyes of many people for a long time.....

They had never thought.....

One phrase and one name.

That the capture barracks would retreat just like that.

Sun Yuhu was beaten till he was like a dead dog. The commander was reprimanded in front of everyone....All of this was not enough to make

the capture barracks act in furious anger.

How many years had it been since the army admitted defeat so easily and quickly?

The muscular commander Zhang Heng was someone very many people recognised. He was the famous martial madman of this area, a pain in the neck for many people. The way he did things was vicious and merciless. If he fell out with you, he would not recognise anyone. If he went insane, he would not even recognise his own family. Even some small nobles, would be somewhat afraid of the consequences of angering him. But this time, when facing the young master of the Taoxuan pavilion, he apologised and paid for the damages.

What did this represent?

Thinking of the power behind the young master of the Taoxuan pavilion, everyone was completely shaken.

The hearts of the people that was scheming to gain some small benefits had already turned icy cold. They did not dare to have the slightest intention to covet the Taoxuan pavilion anymore.

And the people who had some grievances with Taoxuan pavilion, who had secretly directed people to make things difficult for Taoxuan pavilion and the other properties of Ye family, could not help but be worried. They hurried to send people to cancel their prepared plans, and began to think of methods on how to repair the relationship between them and Ye Qingyu.

## Chapter 101 – Three Days

---

Such a disturbance thus ended just like that.

Some of the students that had abandoned the Taoxuan pavilion were able to observe everything from the outside. Seeing the scene, they were so regretful that they could die. They knew better than anyone that they had missed a golden opportunity. Even though Ye Qingyu said that he would still welcome them back to practice martial arts at the Taoxuan pavilion, but compared to Lin Tian and the two others that did not abandon or leave they were found lacking. From now on, to obtain Ye Qingyu's complete trust was an impossible matter.

And some people who were not students of Taoxuan pavilion at this time, could not wait to rush in to become a disciple and learn.

Apart from the Taoxuan pavilion, which martial art dojo in the Northern district was able to do this? Who could casually sit on the steps, drinking wine and only one sentence was needed to force the Capture barracks to retreat?

This was the most naked and real symbol of strength. Entering Taoxuan pavilion was equivalent to finding a great patron. From then on, as long as they said they were the students of Taoxuan pavilion it was very likely that they would be able to walk horizontally<sup>1</sup> across the entire North city district. Even the normally tyrannical gangs and the little sects, would not dare to harm them in the slightest.

One could easily imagine at what sort of crazy rate the news of what happened here today would spread out at. From now on, Taoxuan pavilion did not need to fret over not making a living.

No matter what the place, for a business like a dojo, the best glittering character signboard was strength and background.

Ye Qingyu seemed to have fully demonstrated these two attributes in the conflict today.

“For today, close the dojo, and find someone to repair the entrance. From tomorrow onwards, the dojo will open like usual.” Ye Qingyu gave Tang San a signal.

Tang San understood tacitly. Coming to the entrance, he greeted the gathering crowd outside by raising his clasped hands in greeting. Then he announced loudly: “Everyone of this neighbourhood, friends of the same way, today Taoxuan pavilion will be closed, and will not receive visitors. Everyone should disperse, from tomorrow the Taoxuan pavilion will reopen officially. If you want to formally become a student and learn, then come tomorrow morning.....Disperse, everyone should disperse.”

The crowd gradually left.

Ye Qingyu lowered his head to look at the jar of wine in his hands. There was only a tiny bit left. He was about to lift it up and drink the last drops when the silent Li Shizen that had always sat beside him coughed. “Young man, such a way of drinking alcohol, is not good for your body.”

Ye Qingyu smiled. “I am drowning my sorrows.”

“And what sorrows do you have?” Li Shizen stroked his silver long beard and slapped his own thigh with a laugh. “Young, extraordinary innate talent, success when you are young with no need to worry about

your next meal. You don't know how many people are envious of you. For example, for a rotten old man like me, you don't know how envious I am of young people like you."

Ye Qingyu let out a loud laugh. "Fine, according to this old man's word, I really shouldn't be sad."

Li Shizen also chuckled loudly. "Of course you shouldn't."

Ye Qingyu nodded his head, considering. He turned his head and said to the Tang San beside him: "When we return, send someone to buy more alcohol like this, the taste is not bad. I've decided, from now on if someone make's things difficult for me, then I'll drink myself drunk before taking care of them. Haha, since at that time I'll be drunk and don't know anything, I'll have a excuse for going crazy."

Li Shizen and Tang San was speechless for a moment.

"Young master, such a thing, just leave it for me and my brothers. Let us run your errands." Lin Tian could not bear remaining silent any longer, stepping forwards and volunteering himself.

The young man next to him also quickly nodded his head. "That's right. Young master, let us do some things for you. Also, my father is the best furniture craftsman nearby. I'll return right now and ask my father to come and construct for a free a shining and glimmering golden entrance."

Ye Qingyu could not restrain his smile. "There's no need for it to be

glittering and glimmering with a golden light. Just do it according to what it used to look like and construct another door. For the materials and wages, go find supervisor Tang to pay for your expenditure....” Ye Qingyu paused and looked at the three excited expressions of the three. He said with a laugh. “I am very grateful that you decided to stay behind today. If you are willing , then from this moment onwards Taoxuan pavilion will become your second family. If you have matters in the future, you can go find supervisor Tang for assistance. But do not use the name of Taoxuan pavilion to swindle others outside and use your force to bully others.”

Ye Qingyu’s words were straightforward and brutally honest. He knew that these were the words that the three young people most wanted to hear so he did not have to be coy.

Ye Qingyu admired these three people very much for their ability to resolutely stay in such a situation. Especially Lin Tian. There was a staunch and bravery about him, he was a good seedling worth raising.

“Thank you young master!”

“We will absolutely not make you lose face.”

The three men hearing Ye Qingyu’s words, instantly starting cheering and rushed to slap their chest in guarantees.

After the three had left, Ye Qingyu beckoned to Tang San yet again. “Do things according to the previous rules of the Taoxuan pavilion. Don’t raise the fees. Quickly utilise the time and find more martial instructors, master Zhou will be too busy if he is left on his own. The part time

students that left today can return, but the teachers that left along with Nie Yan are not to be accepted if they return.”

Tang San nodded his head to indicate he understood.

As they were speaking, Little Grass and the teacher Zhou had returned from purchasing equipment. On the way, they had already heard of the things that had taken place. Little Grass saw Ye Qingyu and rushed into the embrace of her brother Qingyu in the first instance, excitedly jumping and cheering.

Master Zhou was a martial instructor around fifty years of age, called Zhou Xiang. His left leg was somewhat disabled, and he had a limp when he walked. His strength was around the fourth stage of the ordinary martial level and his appearance seemed honest and straightforward. Tang San had already given an introduction to Ye Qingyu regarding him. Zhou Xiang was originally an escort at an armed escort company in the city. After one of his missions where he had to protect a person, he wounded his leg in the midst of battle and created a recurring injury. His strength greatly fell and he could not help but leave the armed escort company, finding a living at Taoxuan pavilion. He had already been working here for three years of time, but he was not the confidant of Nie Yan so had never received his trust. Therefore Zhou Xiang did not follow him when he left.

Ye Qingyu smiled at him and greeted him, thanking him for not departing at such a critical time.

Such a attitude, made Zhou Xiang both embarrassed and joyous. His facial expression became conflicted and confused. This middle aged martial instructor was really a straightforward and honest man.

Ye Qingyu also had a look around the dojo.

Compared to four years ago, Taoxuan pavilion had not change much. Many items were old antiques and items belonging from the generation of Ye Qingyu's parents. After Nie Yan had taken away the Taoxuan pavilion, he did not heavily invest into this establishment. Nie Yan must have thought that there was a not a great future for this martial art dojo, so he had always remained a blood sucker, drinking away the blood of the dojo. He was waiting for the day when the business became so bad it could not continue, and planned to sell the land away and leave with his purse in such a situation.

When he walked out from the hall of the Taoxuan pavilion, Li Shizen still remained.

The little girl called Qingqing, had finally placed the heavy medicinal box down. Right now, she was sitting on the platform, speaking and laughing with Little Grass about something. The two little girls were of a similar age, and was very easily able to play together with each other. They seemed to get on together very harmoniously.

An idea was born in Ye Qingyu's heart. He sat beside the old doctor: "Doctor Li, do you have any interest, in coming to Taoxuan pavilion to become our in house medical consultant?"

Li Shizen looked at him.

Ye Qingyu: "When students are training, light wounds and injuries often appear. Some students don't really notice too much and pay proper

attention to it. This can often leave a recurring injury that is harmful for their bodies. If there is an experienced doctor acting as an in house medical consultant and is willing to treat the injuries, I think that such a scenario can be prevented to its fullest.”

Hearing this, Li Shizen smiled. Under his eyebrows, there was a piercing gaze that could completely discern Ye Qingyu’s intention. “Master Ye must have seen that it is not easy for a poor old man and his granddaughter to survive in this chaotic human society, and that we can only struggle and rely on each other. You must be pitying a poor old man like me and want to help us? That’s why you offered.”

Ye Qingyu coughed. “I do have such an intention. Don’t blame me for being presumptuous but I see that Qingqing and Little Grass is getting along so well. That’s the reason I had such an idea. Little Grass that little girl, has had a bitter life. She lost her father at a young age and does not have any playmate whatsoever. I rarely see her be so happy when she plays with other people. If we let them play and practice martial arts together, is that not a good thing for both of the girls?”

Li Shizen nodded his head in agreement. “Then I’ll thank master Ye.”

Ye Qingyu was overjoyed.

Li Shizen accepted much more easily than in his imagination.

Without knowing why, Ye Qingyu felt this white haired old man had an aura of like that of someone regaining their natural state. His pair of eyes was as if it was able to see through all worldly affairs. There was a quality about him that stood apart from this world, different from other people. He was an old man with a story.

The two conversed for a while.

Their topic quickly changed to Spirit herbs and medicine.

Ye Qingyu was surprised to discover Li Shizen cursory words was extremely knowledgeable and had clearly researched in depth regarding different Spirit herbs and medicines. Screening, usage, dosage, quality so on and so forth, he was very familiar with all aspects of medicine. He knew very many things, that was hard to see even within the mysterious tomes of the public libraries of White Deer academy.

He was an old man well versed in medicine.

That was the evaluation in Ye Qingyu's heart.

At this time, there was a familiar searching sound from beside him.

Ye Qingyu turned to look beside him, and black lines could not help but appear on his forehead. Without knowing the exact time, the silly dog Big Head had wriggled free from his grip and jumped into the jar of wine. Sneakily, he had licked clean the beautiful wine left inside. Big Head was now shaking the earthen jar, a perfect picture of someone not yet satisfied.

Time quickly passed to the evening.

Lamps began to be lighted within Taoxuan pavilion.

The young man really brought his skilled craftsman father over along with several of other workers. Through their work, the entrance of Taoxuan pavilion was once again constructed and established. Like what it used to be, it was still made from willow and was inky black in colour.

Ye Qingyu directed Tang San to host a feast, to thank the craftsmans for their work.

Li Shizen and the others also stayed for dinner. The stupid dog Big Head was the thing that was able to attract the most attention in this banquet. There was only one reason for this --this creature was really able to eat too much. No matter what was placed in front of him, he would completely finish devouring it in less than three breaths of time. If this little fellow did not have a tiny and cute outer appearance, the others could not help but be suspicious whether the ravenous appetite of this silly dog would activate and treat everyone here as food and consume them!

Ye Qingyu was completely speechless when facing Big Head.

Too able to eat.

The key point was that he could never be satisfied.

Demon King Ye looked at the constantly disappearing food and rubbed his somewhat painful chest. He began to seriously consider, if this continued on, whether there was really a possibility that he would be eaten poor by this stupid dog. Should he just find a location and throw this good for nothing but eating dog away? A dog without any shred of

martial power and only possessed a cute appearance, should he just chuck him somewhere far away?

At night, Ye Qingyu left Taoxuan pavilion.

In the leftover two days of time, Ye Qingyu remained within the Ye mansion to concentrate on his training.

The third day.

Ye Qingyu stealthily left alone from the Ye mansion, towards the Southern district.

He needed to see Wang Yan, to clear everything up.

The promised time, had finally arrived.

-----

1. domineering, without fear of consequences. ↵

## Chapter 102 – The Back Of That Silhouette...

---

Although Deer city could not be counted as a large scale city, but the North, East, South and West four main districts each had different attributes and characteristics. The Northern district was a location with the highest numbers of poor and destitute people, with the buildings and structures being very varied and diverse. Streets and alleys of all sizes warped and weaved in deranged order. If a person who was unfamiliar with this area entered into the streets, it was alike to entering a labyrinth.

And the South district was the most prosperous business district of the city. Merchants and companies would gather here, along with different armed escort companies and factions. People from a thousand miles around Deer city would converge here, all for the sake of benefit and profit. It could be said that this district collected people from all trades, with all kinds of bad characters able to be seen at this location.

The split second Ye Qingyu entered into the Southern district, he was able to sense a dense odour of merchants that on setted him. The sensation of this district was completely different from the Northern district.

The time right now was the early hours of the morning. Fragmentary snowflakes were still drifting, and the sun far off had not yet risen fully with the eastern showing slightly the marble white sky of the dawn. But even in the most narrow of streets, there were peddlers that had claimed their position, hawking all kinds of odd and strange wares.

The air of the early winter was already extremely chilly.

Ye Qingyu wearing a large black garment and hat, travelling through the crowd.

He unhurriedly headed towards the direction of the [Mist Residence].

Originally Ye Qingyu was worried, that such an attire would be like drawing legs on a snake<sup>1</sup>, and would needlessly attract the attention of people. But only coming here, did he discover, that people wearing all sorts of attire that mysteriously covered their faces could be seen everywhere.

And just like the North district, on the streets, there were quite a few patrolling platoons.

But what was different, was that these squadrons rarely interrogated the people travelling on the streets.

After all, this area was the place with the most people from outside of Deer city. This was the place with the most complicated and diverse group of people. If they went and questioned every suspicious people on the streets, even if the entire standing army was sent to the streets, it wouldn't be enough to complete such a workload.

Ye Qingyu went through the streets without any obstacles.

He did not hurry towards the [Mist residence], and when he passed the different stalls he would eat several buns and a bowl of thin congee. Only after delaying for an hour of time, waiting until the sun had completely risen and the flow of people on the streets became greater and greater did he once again rejoin the crowd.

When he passed by some little stalls, Ye Qingyu would also stop and evaluate, admiring the wares.

And as he passed by these assorted stalls, Ye Qingyu suddenly felt that he could not see the little loli with empty hands<sup>2</sup>. Without knowing why, when he saw a white little bear hanging on one of the stalls, he felt that the little loli must like it. When he asked for the price, the peddler was a crafty fellow and asked for one gold right off the bat. Ye Qingyu was preoccupied too lazy to haggle, buying it straightout.

As he watched Ye Qingyu depart, the peddler was slightly regretful. Since the customer was so generous, he should have set the price slightly higher.

Such a situation, was able to be seen everywhere in the Southern district.

After buying the little bear and carrying in his hands, he was like a person observing flowers from horseback. After wandering in several circles, turning several times and walking backwards, he slowly neared the [Mist residence]

The [Mist residence] was slightly famous in the Southern district.

Because it was one of the ten gold residences in the Southern district.

What was called gold residence, was not a place where they sold jewellery or accessories. It was a place for your sensual pleasures, a

money squandering establishment for you to indulge in luxury. Listening to songs and watching dances, a place where you spent time satisfying your desires. In a place like the Southern district where it was densely packed with commercial activity, such establishments was not in the few.

As he walked in the old streets, he passed by very many of the old small doors that looked simple on the outside. However, if you entered into it, you would discover an amazing and extravagant degree of luxury that was enough to make one staggered.

The reason that the [Mist residence] was famous, was because in the gold residences of the Southern district, it was ranked number ten.

Apart from making Ye Qingyu shocked, this also made him feel slightly strange.

Why would Wang Yan tell him to come to such a place to meet with her.

In the subconsciousness of everyone, a woman —-especially a proper woman, should not appear in a place like this. And Wang Yan was not only a proper woman, she was a person of the highest status in the entire Deer city, with a distinguished identity. She was one of the strongest woman in the city. She should even more not appear at such a place.

And for a similar reason, the little loli Song Xiaojun was the illegitimate daughter of an important person within the the Qingluo merchant company. Furthermore, she was a student of White Deer academy, she should not appear in such a place.

Bring with him many questions in his heart, Ye Qingyu arrived at the entrance of the Mist residence.

Ash grey bricks, black tiles. A little door to a little courtyard.

Beside the entrance was two stone guardian lions not even half a metre tall. The stone work was elaborate but was absolutely not the work of a renowned master, exceedingly average. The little elm door close up was crude and coarse, emitting a kind of sensation that it had undergone many years of wear and tear. The entrance did not have a sign and he was also not able to see the sign saying [Mist residence] anywhere. They did not have a doorman of any sort outside. From the external appearance, it seemed like it was the little house of a normal middle class family.

Ye Qingyu hesitated, confirming that he did not go to the wrong place. Then, he pushed and entered.

The wooden door emitted light sounds of squeaking.

Inside the hall, there were around five warriors wearing black sturdy clothing. From their appearance, they seemed like guards of some sort, and they were currently drinking wine and roasting chicken. They should be warriors on the duty for the morning shift. As they heard the sound of the door opening, one of them considered Ye Qingyu for several glances, then nodded his head. Without saying anything, he brought Ye Qingyu further inside.

Behind the hall, was a brick and tile passageway.

The corridor was exceedingly serene and quiet, not a sight to be seen.

After walking a hundred metres, on both sides of the corridor there were two other paths, as if it was the web of a spider, heading to different

courtyards. With Ye Qingyu's eyesight, he was able to see the name of the different courtyards far away, and the names were particularly unique. They were the Orchid garden, Observing snow garden, Plum shadow garden and so on and so forth. But the doors to these courtyards were round, the black doors covering the inside, without any way knowing what it was like beyond.

On the way, there were not any other people to be seen.

The surrounding environment was quite and indifferent.

From the bustling and active streets from the outside, this environment was completely different. And from Ye Qingyu's imagination of a gold residence, where sensual pleasure was everywhere, dancing and music everywhere, this Mist residence was also largely different.

The leading black warrior, always remained silent. His footsteps was neither fast or slow, only after walking for around five minutes did he went in a passageway, reaching the ends of this corridor. They were in front of a scarlet red door.

“We have arrived.”

The black clothed warrior stopped his footsteps.

Ye Qingyu looked at the scarlet red door.

But the black clothed warrior did not push open the door to enter. He took a seal from somewhere on his clothing and pressed it light on the left of the grey wall of the door. In the flickering glimmer, a ripple like

patten began vibrating, and there was a silver formation like that of a silver dragon activating. Light covering the entrance.

The wall was a formation.

“Young lord Ye, please.” The warrior did not enter, but greeted Ye Qingyu instead.

Ye Qingyu was taken aback, than immediately said in surprise: “So you’ve long recognise me?”

“Your formation image, I have at least seen over a hundred times. So even if in the moment you entered you wore garments that covered your face, but from you atmosphere and the figure of your body, I was able to recognise your identity.” The tone of the warrior with black clothing was exceeding respectful. “Young lord Ye, please enter. Superior Wang has already been waiting for you.”

Ye Qingyu’s heart became even more shocked.

However, he did not ask too much. He took one step into the rippling wall, as if it was just like a water screen, passing straight through. A cool and refreshing feeling directly hit his face, as if he was washing in the midst of water. His body became slightly weightless, just like his first time entering the formation teleportation in the practical battle training.

After a breath of time, Ye Qingyu felt his eyes blurring. The scenery had completely changed.

As if it was another world entirely.

Pools.

Fake mountain.

Fountains.

Fragments of snow were floating in the air, and the pool and springs had already frozen.

At the end of the corridor and under the pavilion, a person wearing a white imperial dress was there. She silently stood with her back facing Ye Qingyu. A cold icy wind blew past, her blue green hair lightly swaying. As if it was a figure independent from the world. Ye Qingyu vaguely felt, that this silhouette was familiar. As if he had seen her somewhere before.

“So you’ve come.”

A familiar voice was heard.

It was the voice of Wang Yan.

Ye Qingyu let out a breath of relief, about to say something.....

But the figure with imperial clothing turned around. Ye Qingyu was taken aback, then his mouth widened in stunned disbelief.

Because her face, was absolutely not the ordinary appearance of Wang Yan.

It was a peerless and unmatched face, an exceptional beauty.

Ye Qingyu did not know how to describe the woman in front of him. She was around twenty years of age, and was namely in the period that a woman was most gorgeous. Her skin was like white jade, without the slightest hint of imperfection. Her hair was like the clouds, her skin like jade. As if she was the creator's favourite. Every part of her face, every curve of her figure, was as if it was sculpted from the most perfect and most astounding ratio. Without exaggerating in the slightest, the woman in front of her, was absolutely the most beautiful woman Ye Qingyu had ever seen.

“What, you don't recognise me ?” A trace of mischievousness flashed in the eyes of this imperial clothed beauty.

A very familiar voice.

It was the voice of Wang Yan.

But that face....just what was happening?

The questions in Ye Qingyu's eyes became even more.

“What? Not long ago, we had just met?” The peerless beauty said laughingly.

Ye Qingyu became even more confused.

Where had they seen before?

That's right, that figure....

Immediately, a bolt of lightning flashed by in his mind.

Ye Qingyu suddenly realised, the reason for the shocking sensation of familiarity when he saw the silhouette of this woman. Because this atmosphere and figure, was evidently the unmatched expert, Wang Jianru that sliced apart the sky high above in Deer city.

That day, the cold light of the sword tore apart space and split apart the gloomy clouds. The peerless sword immortal stood alone, shocking countless lifeforms within Deer city. At the last moment, when the sky cleared, it was as if a fairy descended to the mortal realm. She was deeply imprinted within the hearts and souls of countless martial artists.

Ye Qingyu at that time was gazing into the sky, deeply storing away such a moment.

And at the time when he saw the back of this figure, his heart was as if fiercely struck by something. He subconsciously thought he recognised that figure. And at the time when he slightly recovered, he realised, the peerless beauty in front of him, was she not the person standing above all life in the sky on that day, the unmatched sword immortal?

But why was her voice, exactly the same as Wang Yan?

Could it be ?

Ye Qingyu's heart, could not help but began beating madly.

-----

1. attract attention by doing something superfluous ↵
2. without any gifts and presents ↵

## Chapter 103 – The City Of Unmoving Darkness

---

Wang Yan was Wang Jianru?

Ye Qingyu suddenly realised this key point.

Then he could only feel a spell of dizziness. He could not believe in his own guess.

That person standing independently on the blue dome of heaven, as if she was a female immortal overlooking all living things. That person controlling the [Splitting heaven sword will], that female sword immortal that sliced apart the demonic black clouds shrouding the entire sky, that person....that person, was the head teacher of the first year of White Deer academy?

This was completely inconceivable.

If he had not seen everything in front of him with his own eyes and that Ye Qingyu would genuinely come to such a conclusion of his own volition, he would not even in his dreams connect the two together. Because the two had absolutely nothing in common.

Previously, Ye Qingyu had vaguely felt that the strength of Wang Yan was very strong. But even in Ye Qingyu's most positive estimation, even if Wang Yan's strength was greater, her level was at most at the early stages of the Bitter Sea stage. He did not think that it would reach such a stage.

“It seems from your appearance, you’ve seem to have thought through several problems. Then I don’t need to waste my breath.” Wang Jianru’s face had a faint smile as she looked at Ye Qingyu.

Ye Qingyu fiercely swallowed a mouthful of saliva, disguising the shock in his heart. Shaking his head slightly to make himself more clear headed, he asked with a bitter smile: “Then right now should I call you head teacher Wang Yan or the sword immortal Wang Jianru?”

“A name is only name. Nothing more, nothing less.” Wang Jianru said with a smile. “Ten years ago I was called Wang Jianru, and in these ten years I am called Wang Yan. What is the difference? In the end, I am me.”

Ye Qingyu seemed to have understood something. He asked again: “Then...which is your real appearance? Was the person who was at White Deer academy, the true you?”

Wang Jianru began cackling in delight. “Why don’t you guess?” Not waiting for Ye Qingyu’s response, she answered her own question. “Of course the appearance right now, is the true me. Kekekeke, you really thing a woman such as me with peerless strength, would be as ugly as Wang Yan?”

Sister, you are too self confident.

Ye Qingyu silently cursed at her in his heart.

But at this time, he able to guess just what had happened. Wang Yan should have used some sort of technique to change her facial appearance, transforming the way she looked. Because her strength was high and her method was profound, other people did not see through her disguise.

If this was known to the fellows of first year of White Deer academy, that what they normally thought as a middle aged house wife Wang Yan was Wang Jianru, what would their reaction be? If they knew that her true identity was the peerless sword immortal Wang Jianru, who knew what kind of stunned expression would they display. And those students that had nearly slept in her lessons due to her ordinary appearance, would they be so regretful that they would begin to weep?

There were still many questions in his heart.

But Ye Qingyu did not continue asking on.

Because after a short stunned moment, Ye Qingyu recovered very quickly and realised.

He suddenly realised, that the person standing in front of him, was no longer that middle aged woman of White Deer academy. It was a top expert that was enough to shake the entire Deer city.

A true top expert.

Although for some reason this top expert had hidden her true colours. But an expert possessed the temperament of an expert. As to why Wang Jianru would hide herself within the White Deer academy for ten years,

she must have her own reasons and motives. Perhaps it involved many secrets. It was not something that he was capable of interfering in – this was also the reason that he did not try to understand.

In many situations, knowing too much, was not a good thing at all.

“Where’s Xiaojun?” Ye Qingyu changed the subject. “Is she fine?”

Wang Jianru gave Ye Qingyu a glare, then said: “How can she be fine? The situation that the little girl in is very dangerous, otherwise why would I hide here? The battle on that day, did you not see it?”

Ye Qingyu opened his mouth, asking again: “The person that day controlling the black clouds that shrouded the sky, that expert, is here to kill the little loli? Then the girl of darkness he mentioned, could it be....”

“She is Xiaojun.” The facial features of Wang Jianru became serious. “The girl of darkness of the City of Unmoving Darkness has finally awakened the bloodline within her. Do you still remember, the energy that appeared within her during the [Boundary canyon battlefield]?”

Ye Qingyu nodded his head.

Xiaojun within the boundary canyon battlefield as a result of Xia Houwu’s betrayal became extremely enraged. Without any warnings, her body exploded with an abnormal and powerful energy. From a distance of over five hundred metres away, she destroyed a protector statue with just one strike. At that time Ye Qingyu was also stunned, because even if it was he himself, he could not from so far away destroy a protector statue.

The power that appeared within Song Xiaojun's body, fluctuated with a scarlet red light. As if it was a apocalyptic monster that had awakened from within the depths of the abyss, it caused one's soul to unwillingly shiver in fear. It was absolutely not a power that belonged to the light.

The Unmoving City of Darkness. This was the first time Ye Qingyu had heard such a name.

Unmoving City of Darkness.

The girl of Darkness!

Just simply these two names, made someone feel as if they were within an endless abyss of darkness. The horrifying sensation of being stifled by a terrible atmosphere made one unable to breathe.

“Someone wants to act against the little loli?” Ye Qingyu carefully asked.

Wang Jianru nodded her head. “It's not just someone.....Every righteous person in this entire world, wants to kill her. Apart from the royal family of Snow country, within Heaven Wasteland domain, every martial power within the human world wants to destroy her, root and branch. The one school, three sects and four great ancestral families and other small and large factions all want to kill her. Even the demon court of heaven Wasteland wants to eliminate Xiaojun.”

Ye Qingyu felt like heart was fiercely struck by something.

He felt his throat was somewhat dry. He could not not stop asking: “Just what kind of place is the City of Unmoving Darkness? Why would it have so many enemies?”

“A place that has left light. A place that even the demon race fears. A place that is situated between darkness and light. A place that has once travelled through countless domains. A place.....A place that is like a puzzle.” Wang Jianru seemed as if she was immersed in some sort of memory. After a while, she lightly said: “Fine, the words that I should say have already been said. The condition of the little loli is not that good, go see her. Perhaps this is the last time you will be able to meet her.”

“Our last meeting?” Ye Qingyu was frightened. “Your meaning, could it be....”

“Deer city is not a completely safe place. I need to bring her away.” Wang Jianru said in a small voice. “In truth, we should have long left. If not for the fact that Xiaojun is willing to risk such a danger to remain to see you, we would not have remained.”

When she spoke, Ye Qingyu could vaguely see in the eyes of this female sword immortal there was indecision and confusion. But in an instant, she became incomparably determined.

Ye Qingyu did not know what to say.

He followed along the area that Wang Jianru was pointing to, passing through a water pavilion long passageway. He came to be in front of an ordinary wooden house.

As he opened the door of the house, the dim light from outside shined

in.

Ye Qingyu saw the person he wanted to see in the first instant.

On the willow bed, the little loli Song Xiaojun was leaning against a large pillow, lying down with a delighted smile on her face. Her body was covered with thick quilts, as if she was a gentle and agreeable little kitten that was currently sick. Her eyes that were thin and pallid, brightened with surprise and happiness when she saw Ye Qingyu arriving.

Compared to their last meeting, the little loli was much skinnier.

Her previous baby fat had gone, her face so skinny that bones were able to be seen. Her temple was somewhat sunken in. The originally thick jet black hair that seemed to glimmer with light, was now somewhat yellow and dim, dried out and seeming to curl slightly. The little hand that was exposed outside of the quilts, did not possess its usual vitality. It had withered till it was like the claw of a bird, the skin tightly hugging the bones, blue veins clearly able to be seen.....

Ye Qingyu's heart at this instant tightly clenched together. He felt something painful in his chest.

Just what had happened in these few days on the body of the little body, that made her so haggard? As if her life force was about to be expended, as if she was a flower that was about to wither.

“Brother Qingyu!” On the face of the little loli, there was a joyful expression. “You’ve finally come. I’m too happy.”

She struggled to sit up.

But evidently her body was too weak, without the slightest shred of strength remaining. Only moving slightly made her once again lean back on her pillow, panting for breath.

“Don’t move.” Ye Qingyu quickly rushed beside the bed, supporting the little girl.

As his palm touched this delicate body, he felt as if this did not have any weight behind it. The heart of Demon king Ye could not help grieve. He could not even imagine, in these past days, just what kind of torture the little loli had experienced that would make a martial artist of the Spirit spring stage weaken to such an extent.

“Just what has happened?” Ye Qingyu painfully asked. “Your body...why has it become like this?”

The little loli difficultly used her head to rub against Ye Qingyu’s arm, displaying a dazzling smile. “I’m fine. Don’t be sad brother Qingyu. It’s only that a strange and hateful energy that is activating within my body, wanting to possess my body. I need to expend a great deal of strength to temporarily suppress it.....Sister Jianru once said to me, this is a good thing for me. Because once I become used to such a power, I can ascend to heaven with one step, becoming a peerless expert.”

“A strange power?” Ye Qingyu thought of something. “Is it that type of power that appeared within the battlefield?”

The little loli obediently nodded her head.

And at this time, the colour of the little loli's face suddenly changed. Her face became incomparably pale, her body suddenly started to shake.

Ye Qingyu was taken aback, then saw a bizarre scene——

Scarlet lines upon scarlet lines, appeared under the little loli's deathly pale skin. As if it was frantic water snakes crazily extending everywhere, more and more appeared with it becoming more concentrated. The originally blue veins became scarlet red, the peculiar lines crawling towards the little pallid face of the little loli. As if she was suffering from some kind of horrifying poison.....

A scarlet red aura, began emitting from within the body of the little loli. Ye Qingyu felt that he was facing a bottomless abyss of darkness. The humongous pressure made him somewhat unable to breath, his heart as if it was being tightly clenched by a invisible hand of darkness, wanting to reap his heart from his chest.

“Huchi Huchi!”

The silly dog Big Head immediately awakened from his sweet sleep.

As if he was a bolt of lightning, he jumped out from Ye Qingyu's embrace. His two hind legs stomped with a strange rhythm, staring at the little loli with both anger and fear. An urgent voice emitting from his mouth. He drew back the corners of his mouth, his throat moving up and

down. A ferocious appearance, as if he was about to choose someone to take his rage out on.

This was the first time that Ye Qingyu had seen the stupid dog display such a ferocious appearance.

“Be quiet, return.” Ye Qingyu was deathly afraid that this stupid dog would really rush forward and attack. He grabbed the silly dog Big Head, covering his mouth and once again bringing him back into his embrace.

## Chapter 104 – I Will Come Find You

---

The little loli seemed as if she was suffering from a huge pain.

Her delicate little body began madly shaking. Beads of sweat the size of beans dripped from her forehead. In the blink of an eye, her body was completely drenched with sweat, as if she had just been in a rainstorm. The quilts covering her was completely wet with water. This scene was too terrifying. As if a force that was indescribably powerful wanted to reap the life force within the little loli's body and squeeze every drop of it out like water.

The scarlet red lines, had already spread throughout her entire body.

The blood vessels on her skin seemed to have been taken over by some sort of energy that wanted to explode from her muscles. As if something was travelling up and down through her blood vessels, the veins began drumming and beating. Very quickly, the skin of the little loli became scarlet red.

The little loli entered into a state of unconsciousness. She could not sense anything happening around her anymore.

Ye Qingyu extended his hand towards her, then slowly dropped it.

He did not know what he could do.

Without knowing when, Wang Jianru had appeared without any signs

by the bed side.

“The power of darkness is activating with much higher frequency. Without long to go, her blood will be completely swallowed by the power of darkness and she will become the true girl of darkness.” Wang Jianru’s solemn face had a strange expression, as if she did not know whether to feel regret or expectation. “You don’t need to worry for Xiaojun. Nothing will happen to her. The bloodline of darkness is her natural born power, it will not harm her life.”

“But right now, she seems to be in great pain.....” Ye Qingyu could not bear to watch this.

Wang Jianru had a peculiar expression in her eyes as she glared at Ye Qingyu. “The reason she is feeling pain, is because she is resisting against the power of darkness. She does not want to accept such a power, she does not want to abandon her original identity. Otherwise, the little girl would not be in such a sorry state like now.....The regretful thing is, even if she does not accept such a power, she will still be chased after by the entire human and demon race. Because no matter whether it is the demon race or the human race, they will absolutely not allow a descendant that holds the bloodline of the Unmoving City of Darkness to exist.”

“And if she decides to accept the power of darkness?” Ye Qingyu asked again.

“Then her strength will travel a thousand miles in one single leap. Even if she does not train, her strength will crazily grow along with time. To other people, realms that they cannot reach in their lifetime, to her is only a matter of time. Spirit spring stage, Bitter sea stage, Immortal

stage.....She can easily pass those realms.” Wang Jianru said in a light voice. “There is only one requirement and that is she has to remain alive.”

Ye Qingyu remained silent for a while. “Then let her accept the power of darkness. At least then she will have the power to protect herself.”

Wang Jianru looked at Ye Qingyu, her tone slightly surprised. “An unexpected proposal. Will you not mind, that after accepting the power of darkness, she will truly become a monster that walks in the darkness?”

Ye Qingyu shook his head. “In a choice to allow my friend to live and become a monster or not become a monster and be killed, I will always choose the former. Because as long as she lives on, then there will forever be hope.”

“Somewhat interesting.” Wang Jianru began laughing. “Ye Qingyu, I have always felt that you were a student different from the others. From your words right now, I was not wrong in my evaluation.”

Ye Qingyu did not say anything.

Wang Jianru continued: “Your words just now, I have already said this to Xiaojun. But it’s a pity that the little loli does not want to become a monster. Even if ultimately she cannot decide, at least until the moment she can control her body and thoughts, she wants to remain the silly and clumsy Song Xiaojun and not the Song Xiaojun that is unstoppable and powerful.....Do you know why?”

Ye Qingyu shook his head.

“Because of you.” Wang Jianru sighed with regret.

“Because of me?” Ye Qingyu was taken aback.

“That’s right, because of you.” Wang Jianru said, slowly pronouncing each word. “After she becomes a monster, everything in the past will be broken. Everything that has happened, will disperse like clouds and smoke. She will forget everything. Once her bloodline of darkness explodes, the memories in her blood will awaken. She will know many things of the past, and will forget everything that has happened. Including you.”

Such a thing would happen.

Ye Qingyu was dumbfounded.

“Perhaps you do not realise, how important you are in the little loli’s life. In these many years, her first strand of sunshine was your faint smile. Apart from her mother, you are her closest family.” Wang Jianru looked at Ye Qingyu, as if she had thought of something, sighing again. “Everything seems as if it is has already been predetermined in this world. Perhaps meeting you in White Deer academy, was the fated crisis of the little girl.”

Ye Qingyu did not know what to say in response to this.

He knew that when he was together with the little loli, he was very

happy. But he had never thought that he was so important to the little loli.

Even though she had only gone through ten years of life or so, but the fate of forgetting everything was still far too cruel.

No wonder the little loli did not wish to accept such a power.

But Ye Qingyu still felt, that only by living on was there still hope and possibility. What was forgotten could be remembered, but once dead there was no method of coming back to life.

“The mother of Xiaojun? Does she know the state of Xiaojun?” Ye Qingyu asked.

Wang Jianru lightly shook her head. “She is only a normal person, a very ordinary normal person. For many of the powers high up and above, such a person is tiny and unnoticeable. If not for her birthing a girl that possesses the bloodline darkness, she would not even appear in the sight of the different factions. After Xiaojun has received the power of darkness, she will even forget her own mother. From all aspects, such a woman has no value.”

“But she is the mother of Xiaojun, her biological mother.” Ye Qingyu defended against this point.

Wang Jianru remained silent for a while, then said. “Do you know, if not for Xiaojun’s stubborn insistence, you would not even appear here today. You would not see Xiaojun again. And the commoner concubine

that was bullied and disregarded by the Song family, would not receive the proper arrangements.....You need not worry. The mother of Xiaojun has already been given the proper treatment. She will safely live out the rest of her life, and will not be in any danger.”

Ye Qingyu thought for a while. “Then right now, should I leave?”

Wang Jianru nodded her head. “You really should leave. What you should know you already know, and what you should see you have already seen. The longer you stay here, the more in danger you will be. You cannot even imagine how dangerous and terrifying the enemies of Xiaojun are. They nearly exist everywhere. In this world, there is nowhere that they cannot be found. The Mist residence will not be hidden for too long, and will be exposed sooner or later.....In truth, Ye Qingyu, I have high expectations for you. Perhaps in the future, you can become an existence that can shake the entire Deer mountain range and even the Snow country. This is the reason apart from you being close to Xiaojun, that I have always treated you specially within the academy. Leave, I don't want such a talent to be dragged into a vortex that you should not be responsible for. If not for Xiaojun's insistence, I would not even allow you to appear here in this place.”

Ye Qingyu nodded his head.

Everything that had happened today, made Ye Qingyu feel like this was a parting between life and death.

His feet seemed to have stuck to the ground. No matter how much force he used, he could not lift them.

Ye Qingyu's gaze, landed on the frail body emitting a scarlet red radiance that was quaking frantically. His heart was dripping blood. Time and space seemed to freeze in this instant. Beside his ear a faintly discernible voice suddenly sounded with an innocent and unaffected voice: "Are you senior brother Ye Qingyu?"

These words, was said in that dazzling early morning with the air of excitement still permeating the air. Within the school grounds of White Deer academy. The little loli that because of her large robes had tripped on the ground. Her golden and glittering smile as she jumped and laughed in front of him.

It was the first meeting of these two. Their first words.

In Ye Qingyu's mind, many, many scenes constantly flashed past.

Within the black Grievance hall, the little fellow that was as lively as a rabbit appearing. As she rubbed her head, she said in a huff, I really just missed you too much, brother Qingyu.....

Under the girl's dormitory, this energetic and hopping little girl, like a swallow that did not care about anything had rushed into his embrace. Using her head to rub his arm with a laugh, asking with a delighted smile: Brother Qingyu, did you come here to look for me?

And in the boundary canyon battlefield, as she killed the demon rune soldiers while she muttered in anger: Brother Qingyu lied to me. He said he would come find us, but he still hasn't appeared.....

Also.....

The scenes of their meetings, image after image blurred in front of his eyes.

Ye Qingyu could not help but feel the corners of his eyes moisten.

The agony and anguish of completely losing a family, Ye Qingyu had already experienced four years ago. He had never thought, that four years later, after he had adjusted to his new life with difficulty, he would ever shed a tear again in his life. But right now, was he about to experience the pain of his heart drilling apart once again?

As he turned around and took a step, Ye Qingyu suddenly thought of something, turning back.

“Little girl, this is my present to you.” Ye Qingyu came over and brought the little toy bear he had bought today at the stand. He gently placed next to the hand of the little loli who had already entered into a state of unconsciousness.

If he knew that today represented their departure, Ye Qingyu would have definitely seriously chosen a better present.

As he looked at the face of the little loli, he seriously imprinted this haggard and pallid face into his soul. Using a tone akin to making an oath, Ye Qingyu said slowly, pronouncing each word to its fullest: “Little girl, live on. Accept the power that comes from your blood....I will definitely remember you, no matter what you turn into. I will forever be your brother Qingyu. I will definitely come find you, to make you remember me once again.”

As he finished, he looked towards Wang Jianru, his tone determined. “I need to know, just where Xiaojun’s mother has been placed.”

Wang Jianru instantly understood Ye Qingyu’s intention.

She hesitated for a moment, then nodded her head. “You will know.”

Ye Qingyu said his thanks, then turned and left.

He did not ask just who Wang Jianru actually was, or why did she do her utmost to protect Song Xiaojun, or whether there were any other people. He did not even ask, from today onwards, just where Wang Jianru would bring the little loli.....these questions were completely meaningless.

Ye Qingyu knew deep within in his heart, in this world, only with strength could one ultimately solve everything.

## Chapter 105 – Surrounded In All Directions

---

The moment Ye Qingyu turned and leave, the little loli that had always remained in the state of unconsciousness suddenly seemed to sense something. Her withered little hand stretched out, wanting to grab at something. But ultimately it fell back down without any strength. A crystal clear tear, slid down from her cheek.....

“Brother Ye, don’t leave.....”

These mumbled words were said with difficulty from her mouth.

The back of Ye Qingyu’s figure, ultimately disappeared from the wooden house.

The originally white little bear that was leaning against her suddenly fell into the embrace of the little loli. As if she was trying to grab the entire world in this instant, it was unknown where the little loli found the strength to hold onto the bear. She desperately held the little toy that had been bought from the stand, her five fingers entering deep within the little bear...

Wang Jianru subconsciously wanted to pull the little bear away.

But at this time, the scarlet red pattern surrounding the little loli, seemed to crazily extend. It travelled along the little loli’s arms and entered into the toy bear. In the blink of an eye, the white bear became a dim red colour. And in the dead eyes of the little bear, it began glimmering with a flickering red light.....

.....

.....

Following the path, he went to the exit of this independent little courtyard.

Ye Qingyu took one step over the wall flickering with silver light formation.

He came back to the still and peaceful passageway. The black clothed warrior was still waiting there quietly. As he saw Ye Qingyu coming out, he nodded his head slightly without saying a word. He remained silent as always, leading the way forward.

Ye Qingyu followed behind.

His thoughts were in disarray and he was in a subdued mood. He did not want to talk too much.

The battle in the skies that shook the entire Deer city once again flashed in Ye Qingyu's mind. He suddenly remembered the words of the mysterious expert that had controlled the demonic black clouds.

From the information within his words, the black cloud expert should be someone from the city of unmoving darkness and he had come to find the little loli. But for some reason, Wang Jianru seemed like she did not want the little loli to end up in that person's hands.....

In this matter, there were far too many secrets.

Ye Qingyu still had many questions that he could not make sense of at this time.

But without knowing why, as he subconsciously handed the little loli into the hands of Wang Jianru, he was reassured, very reassured. If there was a person in this entire world that really thought from the perspective of the little loli and did not covet the secrets on her body, then that person was Wang Jianru.

He passed through the long passage.

It was as if an age had passed.

Finally they came to the exit of the Mist Residence.

At this time, the people coming to the Mist residence to spend time and find entertainment gradually began to increase. There were continuously people entering and exiting from the entrance, and the previous warriors who were drinking wine and roasting chicken had already finished eating their breakfast meal.

They were sitting on the seats conversing, occasionally raising their eyes to inspect the people entering. The guards weighed them up and observed the visitors, so they did not allow someone to enter that should not enter.

The black clothed warrior returned to his seat, taking a long gulp of alcohol before laughing along with his comrades.

Ye Qingyu's footsteps did not stop, walking straight out of the Mist

residence.

The sky outside was still dim, and the floating snow had become more and more concentrated. The snow storm that had began three days ago did not show any signs of stopping. Everywhere around the streets, thick piles of snow had already been created, and the entire Deer city was shrouded in vast white blanket.

Ye Qingyu's appearance was covered by his large garments. Lowering his head, he walked slowly through the streets.

If there was no accident that occurred, White Deer academy would no longer have a first year head teacher called Wang Yan. This represented that since Wen Wan had also left, Ye Qingyu's only familiar friend would also disappear from his life.

This made Ye Qingyu once again seriously consider the path facing him.

A tremendous change was currently occurring within White Deer academy. An intention to leave was born in Ye Qingyu's heart.

But once he left the White Deer academy, just where he could go?

At this moment Ye Qingyu could not sort his thoughts out.

He step by step walked forward slowly. Step by step, he was gradually pondering.

Abruptly, came the sounds of urgent footsteps and the clanking of

armour from beside his ears. The faint friction emitted by the metal rubbing against each other resounded throughout the air drifting with snowflakes, making it seem especially jarring. Ye Qingyu lifted his head and was able to see a black armoured group of troops fifty metres away. As if they were a black tide, they broke apart the street covered in white snow, quickly nearing.

“It’s the army of the country stationed in the Southern district, [Black mountain barracks]!”

Ye Qingyu was slightly shocked.

They were a similar organisation to the [Capture barracks] in the Northern district. The [Black mountain barracks] was one of the elite armies stationed within white Deer academy and was controlled by the Southern military leader. In these days the atmosphere of the city was strange and there were often people of the [Black mountain barracks] patrolling around the streets that maintained order within the city., But this group of people, was evidently not in the same class as a patrolling squadron. There were at least a few thousand people, in full armour and with some riding horses. The people on horses were wearing the black robe of formation masters. Scouts also flew low in the sky, flitting past wearing formation armour.....

This army had the countenance of someone facing a great enemy.

Ye Qingyu moved, silently flitting to the sides of the street and moving away. He waited until this large army had passed by.

He looked towards where the [Black mountain barracks] was rushing towards.

“It’s the direction of the Mist residence.....”

Ye Qingyu seemed to have suddenly realised something.

And nearly at the same moment, Deer city began vibrating and shaking from underneath.

As if some horrifying energy was about to break through the earth. From all sides of the city, streams of saffron yellow light soared into the sky like bright resplendent meteors shooting through the air. It left long tails in the air, and finally converged in the centre of the skies, forming a humongous grid and surrounding the entire Deer city within!

“This....could it be {Million knots of Earth and Glass}?”

Legend had it that underneath the ground of Deer city, that there was a hidden formation that was extremely powerful. Once it was activated, not only did it block everything from the outside, it was also able to prevent the people inside the formation from escaping. It was a formation that was enough to rank near the top in the entire Snow country, and was known as the [Million knots of Earth and glass]. In these decades of time, no one had ever seen the experts of the city control such a formation before because every time it activated, the amount of yuan qi of heaven and earth it expended was really too vast.

Who would have thought today was the day that the legendary formation would really be activated.

As the formation was activated, streak after streak of yuan qi shot into the sky. After this, there were expert after expert that appeared from all

directions, flickering with the bright lights of yuan qi. They headed urgently towards the direction of the Mist residence, surrounding the Mist residence from all directions.

Within the snowy skies, hundreds of figures were densely packed. They towered over the Mist residence.

These were all the famous experts of the city that were of the Spirit spring stage and above.

In a instant, they had really appeared.

A terrifying yuan qi turbulence swept throughout the land. Such a scene of hundreds of Xiantian experts acting in concert had not happened for a very long time within Deer city. Every one of them blossomed with resplendent yuan qi radiance, as if every single one of them was a radiant sun. It made one unable to stare at these figures directly.

Within Deer city, everything was in disorder.

The people that were originally undergoing all sorts of activities was scared by such a abrupt and unexpected scene.

Countless people stared dumbly at the skies, not knowing what had occurred.

“The city leader office is prosecuting the demon girl of darkness. Immediately depart a thousand metres away from the Mist Residence, otherwise you will be charged with collaborating with the demon girl.” A

voice that was like roiling thunder, incomparably imposing exploded and echoed in the air.

The citizens instantly scattered like chicken flying and dogs jumping.

Ye Qingyu's face changed. His previous guess was correct.

It came far too quickly.

The little loli was right now in a state of unconsciousness. Even if Wang Jianru's strength was powerful, but she was still only one person in the end. Would she be able to defend against all the experts of the city?

“I need to go see.”

Ye Qingyu's first reaction was to turn around, heading slowly back towards the direction of the Mist Residence.

Even though he knew there would be danger. There was no way that Ye Qingyu could do nothing and depart.

But he had not even travelled a hundred metres when there were six soldiers wearing the black armour of the [Black mountain barracks] that stood out in front of him. The person leading them was a person wearing a black face armour that covered his facial features, the armour imposing and his gaze glinting with a cold light. He lifted his hand: “Halt! This path is blocked, quickly return.”

Ye Qingyu's footsteps slowed down.

“Hmph, seeing your sneaky appearance, could you be the spy of that prosecuted demon girl? Quickly pull apart the cloth covering your face!” Another black armoured soldier pressed step by step closer.

Ye Qingyu hesitated slightly, then grabbed the air lightly. The Little Shang sword that was within the second spirit Spring in his dantian world vibrated slightly. Between his eyebrows, a killing intent was activating. He was about to act.....

But right at this moment———

Xiu!

A bright sword light, soared into the sky from far away.

The sword light was like electricity, shrouding all the floating snow in the sky. In this instant endless light filled the space between Heaven and Earth.

A silhouette shot into the sky.

It was Wang Jianru.

A person that towered over all life, the peerless female sword immortal that sliced apart the sky.

She finally acted.

In this moment, it was as if all the light in the world, was overtaken by the radiance of this sword.

“I don’t want to begin a slaughter today. Quickly move aside.” Wang Jianru’s voice was calm and brought with it indifference. The words resounded between Heaven and Earth. Her voice like her sword, it had a type of power that was enough shake one’s heart.

“Haha, arrogance! A weak female, dares to interfere in the matters involving the two great race and the City of Unmoving Darkness.”

An conceited and tyrannical voice broadcasted throughout the skies . A muscular figure covered by armour glowing with black light, walked towards her step by step in the air. There was a terrifying yuan qi fluctuation around him, ripples visible to the naked eye expanding with him at the centre. Behind him was ten subordinates from the same army, surrounding and protecting him. He was like a War God stepping through the air, radiating ferocity.

This was the number one person of the Southern military office, military leader Chen Jiuxing.

Within Deer city, Chen Jiuxing controlled the elite army [Black mountain barracks] . His status was only under the city leader, and was above thousands of other people. He was a person with true power, a prestigious character in the city for over twenty years. It was even said that he was a relative of the royal family. A stamp of his feet was enough

to make the entire Deer city tremble three times.

## Chapter 106 – Enemies On A Narrow Road

---

The sudden change within the city immediately attracted the attention of countless people.

Including the elite soldiers that were currently blocking Ye Qingyu.

At this time, Ye Qingyu's thoughts cleared. He promptly realised that he was still immersed in the negative emotions that had been caused by bidding the little loli farewell. In that brief moment, he really had the intent to kill them. Thinking back, instantly made cold sweat drip from all over his body.

These soldiers were the elite army that protected the Snow county. They only listened to orders, without distinguishing from good or evil and was the main force when resisting the demon race. These soldiers should not die in his hands. Furthermore, there were so many martial experts in the air. Once he made a move, it could not help but attract the notice of these people. Once the criminal charge of killing a soldier was placed on him, this was not something he could laugh about.

With a brief thought, Ye Qingyu's figure flashed, disappearing from where he stood.

Once the leading soldier had recovered from the scene in the skies and turned to look back, Ye Qingyu was already gone.

“What's happened? Where is he?” Another soldier was deeply shocked. “Can this fellow really be the comrade of that demonic girl? It's a pity, we

got distracted and let him get away otherwise it would be a great merit.”

The leading soldier shook his head. “This person is strange and is definitely not weak. We may not be his opponent. It doesn’t matter if we let him escape, layers of barriers has already been placed within the city. If that person is really the henchman of that demonic girl, he will be executed sooner or later.....”

As he spoke, a tightly clustered meteor like light without any signs appeared in the skies. Then it ruptured apart. In a split second, it made the entire Deer city seem as if it was in a dream, with an indescribable magnificence and bizarreness to radiance.

“The signal to attack! Lets charge in.”

The leading soldier loudly roared, taking out the long sword in his waist. Leading his subordinates, he charged towards the Mist Residence.

And nearly at the same time, around all directions of the Mist Residence there were large numbers of soldiers from the [Black Mountain barracks] that appeared. As if they were a black avalanche, they advanced and rushed towards the Mist residence.

Countless walls of the streets and alley were destroyed by the martial experts, dust and smoke rising to the sky. When the machine of the orderly army began functioning, it was extremely cold and merciless.

Without any prior signs, hundreds of people wearing night skin tight clothing appeared in the originally empty and silent streets. Their pace was vigorous and their figures agile. Evidently they were experts of the martial path. As if they were a nest of grey snakes, they blocked the path of the charging [Black mountain barracks] army coming from all directions.

A brief exchange between the forces.

The clash of metallic weapons striking each other constantly emitted.

What accompanied this clash was the grievous screams that occurred just before a person died.

White snowflakes danced, red blood spurted.

An abrupt and unexpected battle, broke out this afternoon in the Southern district.

“Haha, no wonder you hid the demonic girl here. So you had long hidden your forces here. Hmph, a evil doer will forever be a evil doer. They are fated to die, can they overturn this fate?” Within the air, the Chen Jiuxing wearing black armour laughed loudly. With a flick of his hand, a incomparably huge hatchet appeared in his hands.

He casually swiped.

A yuan qi formation was able to be seen on the huge black hatchet.

Originally the hatchet was only around half a metre large but the moment it struck through the air, it suddenly transformed into a weapon hundreds of metres long. Glorious black light came from this weapon. As it neared the ground, the power of this yuan qi hatchet became stronger and stronger. From far away, the impact of this scene made it seem as if

even the sky was being chopped apart by this hatchet.

“You are looking to die!”

In that clear and cold voice, a vast sword light shot into the sky from the Mist Residence.

Bang!

The sword light crushed apart the yuan qi hatchet.

The terrifying residual forces from this impact travelled all around.

At first glance, it was as if a hurricane broke out twenty metres from the ground that radiated in all directions. The air rapidly circulated. The terrifying force, was enough to make all the architecture within a hundred metre collapse like paper falling with a crash. Hundreds of pounds of rubble and smashed walls flew through the air in chaotic trajectories. Dust and white snow completely enveloped the sky in an instant!

In such a chaotic commotion, a white figure soared into the sky.

Her sword was like lightning.

It was namely the female sword immortal, Wang Jianru.

Her figure was like electricity, advancing towards Chen Jiuxing.

The time had finally arrived for the battle between true experts.

A thousand metres radius from the Mist Residence was instantly transformed into an Asura battleground, incomparably chaotic.

Ye Qingyu was a like a black spirit, piercing throughout this chaotic battlefield. He carefully avoided both parties, observing in detail everything that occurred around him.

The grey clothed warriors that had suddenly appeared around him, seemed Wang Jianru's men. It was only that when Ye Qingyu entered the Mist Residence, he did not see a hint of these people so he had no way of confirming whether this assumption was correct. But recalling the way Wang Jianru handled matters this was not such a great leap to make. She was mysterious, dealing with every matter using meticulous planning and foresight. She hid herself within White Deer academy for ten years without being discovered. To privately raise a group of warriors that were loyal and willing to die for her was not a problem.

But in such a situation, where it seemed that the entire Deer city encircled them and wanted to annihilate them, would they be able to handle it? Even if Wang Jianru's strength was even more profound, would she be able to bring the little loli safely away?

Furthermore, the enemy at this time was not only the army stationed at Deer city.

There was also the person that previously battled with Wang Jianru, the person that always hid after being defeated by the Splitting Heaven sword will. That terrifying expert that controlled the black clouds permeating the air....

In his heart, Ye Qingyu was extremely worried.

That was the reason why he secretly returned and had risked coming back into the battlefield.

Even though his strength could absolutely not alter anything, but there was no way he could just leave the little loli and depart in peace.

At this time, the entire area had already become a disordered huddle. The grey clothed warriors crazily delayed the advance of the enemy. Evidently there was no way for them to come out alive of this situation so they could only fight to the death. Their resistance was grievous and critical. From the perspective of individual strength, their power was higher than the elites of the [Black mountain barracks]. But due to the absolute numbers advantage, injuries and death began to appear and the area they defended constantly shrunk.....

Within a collapsed house, there were tragic screams resounding.

It was obviously a normal citizen within the house that had not yet left and was dragged into such a battle. They suffered a calamity that had nothing to do with them.

The leader of the [Black mountain barracks], obviously did not want to rustle the grass and alert the snake so he did not move the people of Mist residence away completely before the battle. Therefore from the start, he

did not want to evacuate the people a thousand metres around the Mist residence prior to attacking. In other words, the normal citizens within this area would be needless sacrifices for this plan. Only those with true luck, would perhaps be able to retain their life in the midst of such a chaotic battle.

Ye Qingyu saw with his own eyes, the tragedies that were occurring. In a collapsed house within the battlefield, a young husband and wife was crushed to death by the shattered stone wall. From their appearance they had not yet been wedded for long, and there were still red celebratory characters in the room. An endless desolateness and pity....

Facing such a scene, Ye Qingyu could only sigh.

As he passed by more collapsed structures, if there were people injured, Ye Qingyu would drag them away from the destroyed structures and stop their bleeding.

He did his utmost to get near the Mist residence, wanting to find where the little loli was exactly. But he kept failing. The grey clothed warriors defence was extremely frantic, as long as he was not someone that belonged to their group they would strike to kill. And as for the people of the [Black mountain barracks] they thought that Ye Qingyu was an enemy, attacking him whenever they saw him.

Pak!

Ye Qingyu's fist shot out, sending a soldier of the Black mountain barracks flying.

“Continuing in such a way, is not a good method. Before I can find the little loli, I will become the enemy of everyone.” Ye Qingyu dodged a whistling long sword, ducking and leaning, entering into the embrace of the grey clothed warrior holding the sword.

He then knocked him flying, his figure flashing and concealing within a collapsed stone house nearby.

After attempting several times, Ye Qingyu finally managed to hide himself under a stone bridge a hundred metres away from the Mist Residence.

From this position, he could see the destroyed entrance of the Mist Residence. In the previous exchange between Wang Jianru and Chen Jiuxing, the residual force from this exchange had nearly completely flattened this location. Without the obstruction of high walls and passageways, he could largely see everything within the Mist Residence clearly. But right now, he still had not yet discovered the figures of the little loli and the others....

“I can only hope that Wang Jianru has already arranged everything.”

Ye Qingyu thought in his heart.

And at this time, a black figure abruptly crawled from the rubbles of the Mist residence. Shaking off the dirt and dust on his body, like a agile cat, he slowly and carefully began to act.....

It was that black clothed person.

Ye Qingyu's heart pulsed. Seeing this figure, it was the person who had recognised him with just glance in the mist residence, the black clothed person that had brought him to see Wang Jianru.

Should he call out to him?

Ye Qingyu hesitated for a moment, then heard a series of footsteps running towards them.

“Who's that? Stand there!”

“Escape? You dare escape? He must be a person working for that demonic girl. Everyone charge, the commander has an order, capturing people alive will have a heavy reward!”

Several loud shouts sounded and the urgent footsteps brought with it the clank of armour. Evidently it was the elite soldiers of the [Black mountain barracks]. They had discovered the black clothed man and charged towards him. What followed after was the sounds of swords clashing, and very quickly a grunt. With a plop someone fell, and the battle stopped.....

“Motherfucker, who let you escape, you have killed the people on our side. Little kid, you have guts. Tear his black cloth from his face, I need to see his appearance.....” A arrogant and poisonous voice was able to be heard extremely clearly.

Evidently the black clothed person could not win against the soldiers alone, and was ultimately captured.

What followed after was the sounds of flesh striking flesh. It should be the black clothed man being fiercely slapped.

Ye Qingyu originally wanted to act to save him, but hearing this familiar voice, he paused.

This voice, was really too familiar for him.

It was the voice of Xia Houwu.

Because of the matter that had occurred within the [Boundary canyon battlefield], Xia Houwu had been expelled from White Deer academy. His name was erased from the register without anyone knowing where he went. Originally Ye Qingyu wanted to find Xia Houwu to settle their debts, but he did not think that he would come across him today. This was somewhat queer.

But as he thought deeper about this matter it was not so strange. The Xiahou family was one of the top noble families in the city.

Through the accumulation of generations, they possessed influence and wealth. No matter what, Xia Houwu was the son of the first wife of the head of family. Even though he was expelled from the academy, to rely on relations to enter the [Black Mountain barracks] in order to gain some experience was very possible. After all, for many nobles, an army was a passable destination to train and perfect one's skills.

“Who, who are you? Where did you hide the demonic girl?”

On the bridge, the soldiers was currently interrogating the black clothed man.

Ye Qingyu evaluated all around him. Within a hundred metres dust and snow was thick in the air, without signs of many people nearby.

Such an opportunity was hard to come by.

He prepared to act.

This time Xia Houwu was really unlucky, to appear at such a place. Last time, after he had targetted the little loli, Ye Qingyu could barely control his killing intent. This time, Ye Qingyu would absolutely not let him go.

## Chapter 107 – The Four Military Leaders

---

Ye Qingyu made his decision, not hesitating anymore and preparing to act.

He activated his inner yuan, then struck out with his fist.

Boom!

A large hole was directly created in the stone bridge he was hiding under..

The rock structure shattered immediately, dust and smoke rising in the air.

At this instant, Ye Qingyu was like a bolt of lightning flying from beneath the bridge with his palm strikes like electricity. In a split second he had struck four times. The four elite soldiers of the [Black mountain barracks] that were wearing black armoured face masks did not react to this ambush in time. They were hit directly in the foreheads. With a muffled grunt, their bodies went limp, falling down.

Ye Qingyu only knocked them unconscious, he did not kill them.

“Who is it”

On the bridge, the last soldier of the black mountain barracks holding

the black clothed person was still there. He was shocked, his mouth opened wide and loudly exclaiming.

The voice belonged to Xia Houwu

Ye Qingyu let out a cold laugh, nearing the distance in an instant.

Xia Houwu felt that this laughter was somewhat familiar, as if he had heard it before somewhere. But in this brief moment he could not investigate too deeply before he needed to defend, the long spear in his hands blocking the strike of the enemy.

Ye Qingyu still only utilised his fists.

Yong !

Within the sound of the impact, the standard weapon made from steel, was bent in a split second by this punch.

The fist completely crushed past the wailing spear, striking onto Xia Houwu's body.

The body of the spear snapped.

Xia Houwu felt his soul flying away and scattering. He could sense a vast force behind the punch entering within his chest. Afterwards, like a mountain torrent breaking out and unleashing, the force destroyed everything in its path. In this moment, he could even hear the terrifying

noise of his own internal organs shattering and crumbling apart.

This was the sound of death arriving.

The pupils of Xia Houwu dilated.

“It’s you....” He was finally able to recognise Ye Qingyu at the last moment.

The next second Xia Houwu was possessed by hatred and mad regret, incomparably alarmed. That he would meet Ye Qingyu here, could it be that was his fate had already been decided by the Heavens? This meeting was different from their last in the Boundary canyon battlefield. Dying here represented a true death, without the chance to resurrect.

“You should have long died. This time, who can save you?” A second force exploded from Ye Qingyu’s fist.

“You.....would really dare kill me, you.....” He bellowed with a dark guttural roar, his facial features covered with hatred and venom. His body was like a kite that had its string broken, landing against a stone wall. Blood spurted madly from his mouth, completely fainting.

Ye Qingyu’s hand struck out again, forming a blade with his hand and snapping the shackles of the black clothed man.

“Follow me and leave.” Ye Qingyu extended his hand to support him.

The black clothed man that was heavily injured he was able to recognise Ye Qingyu. But instead of taking a hand, he took a step backwards and shook his head.

Ye Qingyu was taken aback.

A bitter smile appeared on the black clothed man, determinedly shaking his head. “Young lord, quickly go. They have already seen my face, they know what I look like. Today within Deer city, everyone under the Bitter Sea stage prosecuted by the army will ultimately be found. Don’t worry about me. Bringing me along, will only be your burden.....”

“But.....”

Ye Qingyu still could not bear leaving him behind.

Since this black clothed person was tasked with the responsibility of bring him to see Wang Jianru and little loli, then evidently he was a person that Wang Jianru trusted very much. If possible, Ye Qingyu of course wanted to save him.

“You should leave quickly, don’t linger in such a dangerous place.” The black clothed man took another step or two backwards. “My life is cheap, if not for my master in these past years, I would have long died. Right now I will give my life back to my master.....Young lord, quickly go. Master has already arranged everything, the little princess will definitely be unharmed. You don’t need to worry.”

As he finished, he grabbed a long sword lying beside him. With a slice,

quick as lightning, he mercilessly sliced apart his own face.

Ye Qingyu was greatly shocked.

He was able to see that this sword had completely sliced apart the skin of his face. His entire facial features was a bloody mess. There was absolutely no way anymore of recognising his original features. The black clothed man let out a long laugh, then stabbed the blade into his own chest. He jumped into the river under the stone bridge.

Ye Qingyu remained silent with no words he could say.

He knew the reason why this black clothed man had destroyed his facial features. He was afraid that even if he died, that the army would be able to trace his background and history. He was worried that his family in the city would be affected. Therefore, he would completely destroy his face and chose to commit suicide.

What kind of man was this to be so staunch and loyal.

In this instant, Ye Qingyu was completely shaken.

And at this time, there was the sound of footsteps coming from far away. There was a large quantity of elite soldiers from the [Black mountain barracks] that quickly rushed over.

Ye Qingyu let out a long sigh of regret, turning and heading towards another direction.

As he passed by the corpse of Xia Houwu, a thought occurred to him that this fellow may be faking his death. As he ran, he kicked a boulder, and under his inner yuan, the boulder was like a arrow released from a bow. It completely smashed and mutilated the head of the corpse. Confirming there was nothing to else to be taken care of, Ye Qingyu quickly hid in the rubble and dust far away.

Very quickly, tens of soldiers from the [Black mountain barracks] came to the stone bridge.

.....

.....

A short while later.

Ye Qingyu had successfully managed to escape from the chaotic battlefield around the Mist residence.

The experience that he had in killing and passing through the wilderness area of the Boundary canyon had given him an sensitive instinct like that of a wild beast. At this moment, it proved to be of vital use. He continuously ran into the encirclement and blockages of the Black mountain barracks, but manage to successfully break through the surrounding troops every time.

The battle in the skies was still ongoing.

Chen Jiuxing along with tens of expert of Deer city continued to entangle Wang Jianru.

This was the fight that would determine the final outcome of this battle.

The sword light was like lightning, constantly slicing apart the skies.

With every swipe of Chen Jiuxing's huge hatchet, there would be a vast energy striking out along with it. The yuan qi hatchet chopped apart space, tides of air visible to the human eye spreading out everywhere, incomparably vigorous. By Ye Qingyu's rough estimation, the strength of this person, should have already reached the thirty Spirit springs stage. No wonder he was one of the four military leaders of Deer city, his strength was indeed powerful.

But even if so, along with the cooperation with tens of Spirit spring experts, Chen Jiuxing was still at a disadvantage.

Wang Jianru seemed to be holding something in her left arm. Her right arm casually struck out, and another ray of sword light sliced apart the space. The tightly clustered sword light was like shooting stars. Although the sword light was not as vast or as large as the yuan qi hatchet but it was far brighter. The radiance was able to completely shroud the splendour of the sun and moon. In a instant, it completely broke apart the yuan qi hatchet. ◦

Ye Qingyu retreated below to a restaurant a thousand metres away, mixing into the crowd. All his attention and concentration was focused on the battle in the skies. ◦

The surrounding conversation was noisy and clamorous, discussing the events that were occurring within the city.

“Did you hear that the demonic girl of darkness appeared from the Qingluo merchant company? ”

“That’s right. Do you not see the woman holding the sword in the skies, her background is very great. I hear that even if she dies, she wants to protect the demonic girl of darkness!””

“It seems like this demonic girl of darkness was even a student of White Deer academy.”

“Hopefully the army can quickly eliminate that demonic girl. Otherwise, I hear that the demonic girl of darkness will bring with her a curse. If so, our entire Deer city will be plunged into misfortune.”

In such a world where the martial way was prosperous, there were some people afraid of dying. But people who were not scared and loved to spectate the excitement was in greater numbers. Not only this restaurant, but many of the structures just outside the forbidden radius of entry, was especially packed with all sorts of people. Everyone of them was observing the battle that was like a fight between deities occurring in the skies.

Characters like Chen Jiuxing had not fought with his full strength for a very long time. Even martial artists of the city had not seen such a world shaking battle for many years. Everyone of them was fascinated by what was occurring.

Ye Qingyu had already changed into another pair of clothing, pushing himself into the crowd without saying anything.

And at this time, the battle in the skies had already continued on for over an hour.

Ye Qingyu sensed that something was slightly strange, but could not say what exactly it was.

During this moment, within the air another abrupt change occurred. —

Another beam of light, came from the Western district of the city. Radiant like the sun, it transformed into a tightly clustered dots of lights. Like rain itself, it shot towards Wang Jianru

When Ye Qingyu looked carefully, it was not green dots of light at all.

It was evidently a large swathe of densely packed green sword lights. As if it was a hurricane rainstorm, it struck to kill Wang Jianru.

Another true expert had acted.

It was the number one person of the Western military office, military leader Qian Yuan.

The people all around instantly became excited.

The two great military leaders of Deer city had high status with great power and prestige. For the normal citizens of the city, they were existences where they could see the dragon's head but not the dragons' tail<sup>1</sup>. This time where the two of them united to face a common enemy, could be counted as a grand occasion that had not occurred for tens of years.

But Ye Qingyu was somewhat anxious.

Out of the so many people observing the battle, he was the only one who hoped that Wang Jianru and the little loli would be able to safely depart.

Only after a moment, could Ye Qingyu's worry lessen slightly. 。

The Western military leader Qian Yuan demonstrated a powerful strength. His sword light transformed into rain, and within the green light there was a strange and fearful energy. He was not in anyway less powerful than the Southern military leader Chen Jiuxing. but what was strange was that even after Qian Yuan entered into the battlefield, he could not change the situation at all. Gradually in the this fight, Wang Jianru still completely suppressed and controlled the experts of Deer city.

“This is strange, Wang Jianru can evidently handle there attacks with ease, why doesn't she break through?” Ye Qingyu sensed that something was peculiar undergoing.

Boom!Boom !

Accompanied by the two yuan qi radiance exploding from the Northern and Eastern city districts, there were yet more true experts appearing. Like long streaks of red light shooting through the air, they joined the battle in an instant.

Another two military leaders had appeared.

A commotion was instantly created in the crowd observing the battle.

The four great military leaders attacking at the same time!

“Haha, the four trashes has finally appeared?” The voice of Wang Jianru resounded throughout the sky, bringing with it a pride and contempt. “Qin Ying, your city leader why has he not yet appeared? To dare act against me, but not have the guts to appear in front of me. He sends scraps such as you people to your death?” ”

Before she had finished.

A sword light exploded from Wang Jianru’s right arm.

This sword was enough to shroud all the grace and colour of the world in this very moment.

No matter whether it was Chen Jiuxing’s yuan qi hatchet or Qian Yuan’s green sword light, nothing could block it. Everywhere in the sky, along with the two other great military leaders and the tens of experts,

everything was swept away. Their yuan qi attacks, facing such a sword light was like white snow meeting boiling water. It completely disappeared. Everywhere this sword light passed, space was sliced apart. The clouds were completely dispelled, an azure blue crack sweeping across Deer city.

-----

1. acts extremely mysteriously ↵

## Chapter 108 – An Unexpected Invitation

---

The splendour around the four military leaders completely shattered. Each of them gave a low grunt, then like a giant hammer striking a straw man, they were sent flying through the air. At the same time, the tens of experts attacking in concert was in an even more dismal state. They lost control of their bodies and fell with a crack from the sky.

Splitting Heaven sword will !

It was Splitting Heaven sword will yet again!

Ye Qingyu nearly started cheering out loud.

This sword, was namely the sword that had sliced apart the black clouds permeating the skies and defeated the mysterious expert. Once Splitting Heaven sword will came out, just who could compete?

In front of this sword, the four military leaders could not even withstand one single strike. The tens of experts that aided them could not even be counted as side characters.

Silence completely covered this world at this very moment.

Everyone had their state of mind completely taken away by this sword that could reap heaven and earth. They stared dumbly into the sky.

“I gave you a chance, but you have made me disappointed. You are just a group of retards being used by other people.” Wang Jianru stood independently in the skies, black hair fluttering like a divine woman surveying everything beneath her. “Qin Ying, if you don’t act, then I’m going to leave.”

Qin Ying!

This two words, was the name of the greatest ruler at this time in Deer city. A second class noble of Snow country, one of the four big players of the Deer mountain range, the name of the city leader.

The two words from Wang Jianru’s mouth, held an undisguised provocation.

But in the direction of the city leader office, there were nothing to be seen. From the start till now, it was completely silent.

The city leader whose words held enormous weight in Deer city, his existence like that of a feudal overlord, remained silent from beginning to end. He did not have the intention of acting in the slightest. Even though all the attention of the city was closely focused on the city leader office but there was not a sound to be heard in the vast architecture.

Wang Jianru stood alone in the blue dome of heaven, overlooking the entire city.

After ten breaths of time, a strange and faint smile appeared on the face of the female sword immortal.

“So you are intelligent. ”

The female sword immortal gave the entire Deer city a glance, then shot into the air.

Boom!

Using the power of her physical flesh, using brute force, she broke open a crack on the legendary formation [Million knots of Earth and Glass]. Her figure transformed into a ray of light, winking away and disappearing in the South West direction from Deer city. !

This scene made the four military leaders who witnessed this completely shaken. The faces of the four people instantly showed expressions of shock and disbelief.

Using merely the power of her physical body to break past the great formation created using the entire power of the city, this was too universally shocking. The four military leaders were clear, that if it was they themselves, even if they used all their power along with treasures to strike this great formation, it would be useless. They would be like a watermelon hitting the city wall. Their attacks would completely shatter into pieces in an instant, with absolutely no possibility of shaking such a formation.

In this instant, the four dripped cold sweat, a burst of lingering fear.

They only comprehended just now, just what kind of person that they

had been fighting with.

Especially Chen Jiuxing, he realised how dangerous he was previously. He had just taken a loop around the Gates of Hell. If not for Wang Jianru showing mercy for some reason, he would be dead right now. She could slaughter him in an instant — not only slaughter him, even if the four military leaders teamed up, there was a possibility that they would all be slaughtered in a split second.

This woman, was far more powerful and terrifying than what they originally imagined.

The four military leaders had all previously seen the battle in the skies. They saw the sword light that appeared in the sky, slicing apart the black clouds permeating the air. But they only thought that the clouds had naturally dispersed. Even if they were chopped apart, this did not represent anything. In the eyes of these people, the fluctuations coming from this sword light was not that intense so the four of them therefore had the confidence to challenge this female sword immortal.

But from what it seemed like the distance between their realms was far, far too great. Therefore at that time they were not able to sense the intricacies lying behind that sword. Only when facing her personally, could they sense that frightening Splitting heaven sword will that ravaged everything before its path.

Within Deer city, every force was shaken.

No one had expected that such a large and widespread encirclement and annihilation would ultimately become a farce. The so called four

military leaders teaming up to fight against the enemy, right now seemed more like a joke. The four great characters of the city with serious power and prestige, was played with like monkeys. In the final moment, they even lost the courage to attempt to regain their face.◦

One could imagine, in a long time after, this white dressed woman holding a sword like a immortal, would become the unforgettable monster that would appear in the dreams of everyone in the city.

Ye Qingyu finished watching, then gradually retreated and disappeared within the crowd.

There were many things that he could not think through.

Wang Jianru's strength was so powerful, then why did she need to sacrifice those grey clothed warriors? She absolutely could bring them away before the four military leaders and the [Black mountain barracks] arrived. Just who could block her path? ?

But questions he did not manage understand, did not always need an answer.

Seeing Wang Jianru carrying the little loli disappearing in the horizon, Ye Qingyu's felt relaxed in his heart but also as if he had lost something in his life, somewhat regretful and disappointed. ◦

By the time the sun had set, he had returned to the Ye mansion.

Qin Lan and the others anxiously waited for Ye Qingyu. Today the city

was complete chaos. They were worried that Ye Qingyu would be affected. Only seeing him safely return, could Qin Lan rest assured.

Nothing happened during the night.

In the next few days, Ye Qingyu remained in the Ye mansion without returning to the White Deer academy.

Gradually, there were all sorts of information and news that circulated.

Within these news, the one regarding how Xia Houwu died in battle during the to encircle the demonic girl attracted Ye Qingyu's attention the most.

According to the news coming from the neighbourhood, Xia Houwu had died in battle fighting against the henchmen of the demonic girl. He received the commendation of the [Black mountain barracks]. It was said that the Southern military leader Chen Jiuxing went personally to offer his condolences to the Xiahou family, expressing an apology for the fact that he failed to take good care of Xia Houwu.

In reality in this matter both Xiahou family and Chen Jiuxing was extremely aggravated. Originally Xia Houwu was to be placed in the back lines, with no need to enter the battlefield and in extremely safe position. When the moment came, they could just add a few embellishments on his military achievements and give him a military medal. In less than one or two years, he would have propitious wind throughout his journey and his career would advance. Who would have guessed that such a matter would occur. However, even if the Xiahou family felt grief and indignation, they did not dare to criticise the military leader of a district.

But a crack appeared in the relationship between the two parties.

Reportedly, the six other soldiers of the Black mountain barracks that entered along with Xia Houwu into the field of battle were all noble children of various families in the city. The six of them had only sustained light injuries. Afterwards when the Xiahou family investigated for several days, they could not discover, just who had killed Xia Houwu.....

Apart from this, there were various kinds of rumours regarding the demonic girl of darkness.◦

It had already been confirmed that the so called demonic girl, was born from a common woman in the Qingluo merchant company and that she was a student of White Deer academy. Facing the questioning of all parties, both the Qingluo merchant company and the White Deer academy, maintained a strange silence.

There were also rumours that this demonic girl had a very good relationship with a student called Ye Qingyu when she was at the academy. The direction of the wind gradually showed a tendency to blow towards Ye Qingyu.

Ye Qingyu remained motionless from beginning to end.

He stayed within the [Determination garden] in the Ye mansion, continuing to train.

In order to find the little loli one day, to make her once again remember him, he needed absolute strength. Because Wang Jianru had once said, the strength of the little loli would grow by leaps and bounds. Even if she did not train, she would step into the ranks of the strongest of the world. Ye Qingyu did not have the bloodline or body like that of the little loli, so he could only train bitterly hard.

The strength that Wang Jianru demonstrated had completely stimulated Ye Qingyu.

The battle of the four military leaders in the skies, made Ye Qingyu realise that even the famous experts of Deer city, compared to the vast and boundless Heaven Wasteland domain, was still only ants. He was not satisfied with the current growth of his strength.

With the nameless breathing technique and the bronze book [Titled Fiendgod chart], Ye Qingyu had the confidence to one day soar into the skies.

In the blink of an eye, half a month had passed.

Qin Lan carefully prepared Ye Qingyu's three meals a day, rarely disturbing him. Every couple of days, Tang San would report back to him regarding the different situations of the properties.

Ever since the day that Ye Qingyu had taken care of Sun Yufu in the Taoxuan pavillion, Liu Yuancheng had not made a move. As a result, the business of Taoxuan pavilion flourished. After the rumours of the Taoxuan incident spread, it led the related businesses of the Ye family to stabilise, going on the right track day after day.

Such a situation did not interest Ye Qingyu too much, so he only dealt with it a little bit. Seeing this, Tang San could only feel helpless in his heart.

That day.

Ye Qingyu was namely practicing the four moves of the unmatched general.

Ye Qingyu had already begun to grasp the basics of the four move. The last move, [Sword of judgement] really had endless mysteries. At the moment, the most Ye Qingyu could do under the direction of his inner yuan was to activate a divine sword the width of his palm. The power it displayed was enough to completely crush an opponent at the same stage of him.

At this time, the sound of knocking was heard.

Qin Lan entered with a strange expression. “Little Yu, someone wants to see you outside the mansion.”

“Me? Who is it?” Ye Qingyu casually asked. He knew that the identity of the person wanting to see him must be special. Because otherwise, if it was the pointless people that wanted to gain information regarding the girl of darkness, or little noble families and merchants wanting to give gifts to him, Qin Lan would definitely prevent them from disturbing him.,

“It’s a young man.” Qin Lan said. “He said his name is Xu Ge. He said if you heard his name, you would definitely want to see him.”

Xu Ge? ?

Ye Qingyu was taken aback.

The Xu Ge of Azure Phoenix academy? ?

What did he want from him that he would come to the Ye mansion to find him?

Ye Qingyu felt somewhat peculiar. After considering, he allowed Qin Lan to let him enter the Ye mansion. Changing into new clothing, and taking a quick wash, he headed towards the front hall. 。

As he went to the front hall, he could see the Xu Ge clothed in white, wearing a faint smile and speaking about something to Qin Lan. It seemed that the atmosphere was not bad.

Ye Qingyu could not deny, that if one was to take away the identity that they were enemies in the Boundary canyon battlefield, Xu Ge was a young man that one could easily like. Cultured and refined, possessing extraordinary talent, he knew when to advance or retreat. With a distinguished way of conversing, he was a talented person that was resplendent like a precious jade.

“That senior brother Xu would come to my place, is really unexpected.”

Ye Qingyu greeted him, questioning him openly.

Xu Ge had a faint smile, clasping his hands together. “On the first day that I saw senior brother Qingyu, I knew I would face a great enemy. Within the boundary canyon battlefield, senior brother Qingyu really displayed his divine might, making my junior brothers and I dejected and depressed.”

Ye Qingyu smiled, not saying anything.

Qin Lan smiled and said her greetings, then left the front hall.

Xu Ge had a smile: “Senior brother Qingyu is a person that is straight and to the point. Then I won’t beat around the bush. The expedition party of the Azure Phoenix academy will leave White Deer city three days later and return to the Azure Phoenix city. Me and Elder Chen admires the performance you had very much in the Boundary canyon battlefield. We want to ask senior brother Yu, that whether you had any interest to join our Azure Phoenix academy?”

## Chapter 109 – A Shy Youth

---

Hearing this, Ye Qingyu was taken back.

That the Azure Phoenix academy would invite him to join....this, just what was happening? ?

This was an event that was absolutely outside of his calculations.

“According to my knowledge, senior brother Qingyu is already beginning to feel dissatisfied with White Deer academy due to the previous events. For at least a month, you have not returned to the White Deer academy. If so, why don't you have a change of environments.” Xu Ge had a faint smile when he spoke. “In truth, I think that the glory of White Deer academy has already faded and old habits are hard to overcome. They are already not fit for such a genius like senior brother Qingyu. Only by becoming a student of Azure Phoenix, can allow you to become a true expert. ”

Ye Qingyu did not give a reply.

He was currently pondering the information contained within Xu Ge's words.

Xu Ge was not impatient, silently sitting there, waiting.

After a while, Ye Qingyu asked: “I have a question, I am currently a student of White Deer academy. Can I even transfer to the Azure Phoenix

academy?”

Xu Ge became overjoyed, thinking that Ye Qingyu was seriously considering his proposal. With a large smile: “Of course this is possible. Students transferring between the ten great academies has many precedents. One such recent example, was the Blue Sky of your academy. Perhaps senior brother Ye does not realise, he was once a person belonging to the divine phoenix academy and only later did he transfer to the white Deer academy. ”

Hearing this, Ye Qingyu could not help but be stunned.

What?

How was this possible? ?

Blue Sky had transferred from the Divine phoenix academy?

Although he had previously known, Blue Sky was not a student born and bred in White Deer academy and that he possessed a special background. But he absolutely did not imagine that it was special to such an extent. That person, had really come from the divine phoenix academy.

This was slightly unbelievable.

The name of the Divine Phoenix academy, for any martial artist, was equal to thunder piercing through the ears.

For the simple reason that the Divine Phoenix academy was number one in the rankings of the ten great academies.

This academy was the academy with the longest history and the greatest depth of resources. It was said that it was founded by the people who created Snow country. At the start, Divine Phoenix academy would not accept anyone not of the royal family. But then it gradually loosened the requirements, accepting geniuses that were from common and noble background, making it so that anyone could enter Divine Phoenix academy.

For any young boy or girl, entering the Divine Phoenix academy, was no different from ascending to Heaven in one step.

Who knows how many young geniuses cried and wept, wanting to enter the Divine Phoenix academy. How many noble families had expended their entire family wealth to allow their children to enter the Divine Phoenix academy.

But that monster Blue Sky, really left the Divine Phoenix academy to come to the White Deer academy? ?

His brain, was it kicked by someone?

Ye Qingyu had never thought that Blue Sky possessed such a tale.

There must be many stories behind him.

After considering slightly for a while, Ye Qingyu finally shook his head. “Such a matter, I can’t give you an immediate answer. I need to think over this carefully” ”

Xu Ge nodded his head. “Of course. Elder Chen said, the doors of the Azure Phoenix academy will forever be open for geniuses like senior brother Qingyu. We will leave Deer city within three days. In these three days, if you make an decision, you can come find me at any time. You should know where the temporary residence of the Azure Phoenix academy is located, right?” ”

Ye Qingyu nodded his head.

Xu Ge turned around and bid farewell.

Ye Qingyu did not try to make him stay, seeing him off.

As he was seeing Xu Ge off at the entrance of the Ye mansion, there was a noisy din outside the entrance with short burst of curses mixed in.

Ye Qingyu’s eyebrows knitted together.

When he arrived at the entrance, he could see there were tens of people tensely packed at the door.

“He’s come out, he’s come out, Ye Qingyu has finally came.”

“Hmph, so he came.”

“The person surnamed Ye, since you’ve come, then you should explain to us.”

“That’s right, it’s no use hiding. If you are a man, then explain it full and well to us.” ”

Seeing that Ye Qingyu had come out, the crowd surged violently. They completely pressed close and surrounded him. The people leading the crowd, seemed to be around twenty years of age. They were young and vigorous, anger on their faces. They pointed at Ye Qingyu’s face, saliva sputtering everywhere with several fingers nearly touching Ye Qingyu’s face.

Ye Qingyu was taken aback.

He did not understand just what these people had come for.

He did not recognise these people, having never seen them before. From their appearance, they were also not people of White Deer academy. Their clothing was very ordinary, and did not seem like it belonged to the nobles in the city. They looked more like local ruffians who idled about. He did not know why they surrounded him here and why they demanded an explanation.

Seeing this scene, Xu Ge was somewhat bewildered.

But he only had a brief smile: “Since senior brother Ye has business to attend to, then I’ll first leave. If senior brother Ye makes a decision, you

need only to let me know. I very much hope, that I am able to attend the same academy as a genius like senior brother Ye.”

Finishing saying this, he clasped his hands and left.

Ye Qingyu clasped his hands in farewell.◦

After seeing Xu Ge off, Ye Qingyu stood on the steps, staring down from a high position. He remained silent for a while, lowering his head and looking at the unfathomable people filled with righteous indignation. “Fine, who is going to tell me. Just what do I need to explain, make it clear.”

The leading young man was around twenty seven or eight years old, wearing ragged and coarse clothing. Crossing his arms across his chest, he coldly laughed: “Of course what you need to explain is the situation regarding the girl of darkness. I hear that your relationship with her is the best at White Deer academy. Even if you are not her comrade, you are linked together in countless ways. Say it, just where has that demonic girl escaped to?”

Ye Qingyu was shocked, then a trace of killing intent appeared on his face.

So it was for this.

His gaze, passed by the crowd, remembering every single face in the crowd. Then he nodded his head without saying anything, heading back towards the entrance.◦

“Eh? Stand there!” The young man panicked, a trace of maliciousness appearing within his eyes. He jumped and grabbed Ye Qingyu’s shoulder. “To leave is not so easy. First you must make an explanation for yourself.”

Ye Qingyu did not turn back, his shoulder jolting slightly.

“Ah....” The young man could only feel a pain in his arm, as if it had broken. Then his body flew backwards and knocked into the crowd, causing a loud crashing sound.

Bang !

The entrance of the Ye mansion was firmly locked.

“If you make me see you guys near the entrance again, then don’t blame me for being merciless.”

Ye Qingyu’s voice seeped out from the crack of the doors, bringing with it a icy chill that permeated their bones.

Outside the doors.

The young man and the people behind him stared blankly.

This was not the result that they had expected.

After remaining stunned for a moment, a malicious expression appeared on the face of the young man. “I don’t believe, that he dares to make the entire city as his enemy. If wants to kill someone, haha, just who is he threatening?”

.....

.....

After returning to the Determination garden, Ye Qingyu’s mood was not positive in the slightest.

Even an idiot could tell, that this group of people were just idle ruffians from the streets. He did not know just whose instructions they had received to make an issue out of this. This kind of method was really too insidious.

The little loli Song Xiaojun, was a untouchable dragon’s scale on Ye Qingyu’s heart.

At this moment, Ye Qingyu’s will to kill was invoked.

But he managed to barely suppress it. 。

Only after practising in the nameless breathing technique, did Ye Qingyu’s heart gradually settle down.

Training until night fell, Ye Qingyu then came towards the entrance to

have a look. He discovered that this group still had not departed. But they were not as noisy as before. It seemed like the threat he had made in the day proved to be somewhat effective. He did not pay attention to this matter anymore. After returning to the mansion to eat dinner, he returned to his room and began to seriously consider the proposal that Xu Ge had made to him during the day.

In truth, Ye Qingyu had really began to consider leaving the White Deer academy.

Wen Wan and Wang Jianru had both left the White Deer academy and such a matter had occurred on the body of Song Xiaojun. Ye Qingyu felt that his sense of belonging towards the White Deer academy had already become indistinct. Especially after obtaining the bronze book [Titled Fiendgod chart], Ye Qingyu felt that to stay at White Deer academy to continue to compete with people such as Han Xiaofei and Qin Wushuang was already meaningless.

Going to the Azure Phoenix academy?

Perhaps that was a choice.

But Ye Qingyu did not know the atmosphere of the Azure Phoenix academy, and just what it was like.

Perhaps it was only the difference between a mud pit with another mud pit?

Thankfully during this time, he did not need to rush to make a

decision.

The entire night, was spent in training.

.....

The second day.

Ye Qingyu appeared in the school grounds of the White Deer academy.

He did not know why he suddenly wanted to have a look at the school grounds.

Could it really be that the time for a decision to be made had arrived?

After making a complete loop around the school grounds, Ye Qingyu only just discovered, that the most familiar place he was in White Deer academy was not the demonstration martial grounds, practice grounds nor was it the dormitories. It was the public libraries and the canteen. And the students of the academy were evidently extremely unfamiliar with Ye Qingyu.

In such a large academy ground, Ye Qingyu discovered that he did not have any friends here.

The intention to leave, became even stronger.

By noon, Ye Qingyu still went to the canteen like old times.

Because of the stupid dog Big Head, Ye Qingyu could not help but greatly spend money once again. One man and one dog nearly managed to completely consume two thirds of the entire food provided by the canteen for the students. Thankfully there were not many students in a canteen where food was freely provided, otherwise it would cause a scene where people lined up and protested.

Seeing Big Head devour tub after tub of food like a cyclone passing through the clouds, swallowing it into his endless hole of a stomach, Ye Qingyu did not react. From the initial stunned shock, Ye Qingyu had now gotten numb to such a sight.

After finishing, he was about to leave when a figure appeared next to the table.

Ye Qingyu lifted his head to have a look.

A young White Deer student, seemingly around eleven or twelve stood next to the table. He should be a first year student. With clear facial features, and bringing with him a faint shyness as if he was a girl, there was a spiritualness about him between his eyebrows.

“You are senior brother Ye Qingyu?” The White Deer student said with some reservations.

Ye Qingyu nodded his head. “You are?”

The young boy laughed. “You might not recognise me, but great teacher Hon Kong told me to pass a message on. He said before you leave the academy, you should go see him. ”

Great teacher Hon Kong?

Ye Qingyu nodded his head. “Fine, thank you.”

“No need, no need for thanks, I am only passing on a message. It’s what I should do.” The shy youth quickly waved his hands. “Senior brother Ye, you are my hero, I admire you very much.””

## Chapter 110 – A Letter Coming From The Front Lines

---

After the shy youth finished speaking, his face abruptly became red. He seemed at a loss of what else to do, not knowing what to say next. He turned around, his face covered with excitement and ran away.

The silly dog Big Head, after consuming a large tub of food lifted his head to look at the departing figure of the youth. Then he looked at Ye Qingyu. The atmosphere was slightly peculiar.

Ye Qingyu shook his head with a bitter smile, then slapped Big Head who had a strange gaze. He did not say anything.

He pondered in his heart, just what matter Hon Kong wanted him for. Hon Kong was a teacher who had once given him pointers during the examination process of the academy. Ye Qingyu had very good impression of him. Although since entering the academy, he did not have too much interaction with this teacher, but overall within White Deer academy Hon Kong could be counted as one of the teachers he respected.

If he really was going to depart, then he really should notify this teacher that had such high expectations for him.

Afternoon.

Ye Qingyu went to the public library of the fourth year to research completely regarding the little problems about his martial cultivation

that he had encountered in the past days.

In reality until now, Ye Qingyu had already completely read the variety of tomes and books stored in the four public libraries. This was equal to deeply imprinting the contents of these books deep within his mind due to his eidetic memory.

And as for the secret martial libraries in White Deer academy, these were places that were seriously guarded and possessed tight security. Only teachers of the academy were allowed to enter. Within these martial libraries, there were high class yuan qi techniques contained within. It was nearly impossible for a student to enter. Only if they made a great contribution for the academy or if they ranked top three in the great competitions, would they obtain an opportunity to gain a yuan qi secret technique.

But for Ye Qingyu, this already held no meaning whatsoever.

As he came out from the martial library, the time was already evening.

He stood on the platform of the martial library, surveying the school ground all around.

The White Deer academy shrouded in twilight still had a beautiful scenery. But Ye Qingyu found that he could no longer become immersed into such beauty like he could the first time he took a step into the White Deer academy.

“It’s time to say farewell to great teacher Hon Kong.”

At this moment, Ye Qingyu abruptly made his decision to depart.

Before the sun had set, Ye Qingyu had arrived at the office of great teacher Hon Kong.

As he knocked and enter, the golden light of the setting sun shone through the coloured glass in the depths of the room. Behind the large red wood table, a tall and thin figure stood in front of the window, his hands clasped behind his back and his back facing the room. As if he was in a deep reflection.

This room had a strange tranquillity about it.

“So you’ve come?” The voice of great teacher Hon Kong held a trace of fatigue.

Ye Qingyu was slightly puzzled, then respectfully greeted him. Coming to the front of the large red wood table, he said: “You’re looking for me?”

Hon Kong stood where he was without turning back. After remaining silent for a while, he said: “I’ve heard that the people of Azure Phoenix academy, came to look for you in your mansion?”

Ye Qingyu nodded his head.

Hon Kong still did not turn around.

“Little fellow, don’t be mistaken. I did not send someone to monitor you but to monitor the people of Azure Phoenix academy. Only through this did I realise, that the people of Azure Phoenix did not seem to follow the rules when staying here.” Hon Kong faced the window displayed the golden setting sun outside, and sighed yet again. “They should have invited you to go to Azure Phoenix academy, is that right?”

Ye Qingyu nodded his head again. “That’s correct.”

“I have always had high expectations for you. From the first moment I laid eyes on you, I was able to see the terrifying potential hidden within your body. And this was proven true. From your cultivation speed afterwards, you did not disappoint me. It’s a pity, a pity.....” A tone of regret was within the words of Hon Kong. “It’s a pity that the White Deer academy today, is no longer the White Deer academy of the past. I won’t blame you if you go. A pond cannot raise a dragon, leaving is fine.....Ai!”

Ye Qingyu did not know what to say.

The words of Hon Kong held an unprecedented gloominess and exhaustion. It was completely different from the image of the great teacher that was normally dauntless and ferocious.

“Azure Phoenix academy within the ten great academies, is placed at the third position but they have always wanted to overtake the second place. They often consider themselves to be the second place, and is sometimes a bit too egoistical. But for you, perhaps this is not a bad choice.” Hon Kong silently stood there, his silhouette emitting a feeling of indescribable melancholy. “But you must be careful of the person leading the party this time, that Elder Chen. He does not have any

upright intentions. The moment he came into Deer city, he caused the entire Deer mountain range to be restless and chaotic. He caused chickens to fly and dogs to leap and the wind and rain not to stop ever since coming here. I fear the matter is not as simple as the fact that he has high expectations for you.”

Ye Qingyu smiled slightly.

He understood Hon Kong’s meaning.

After the great competition in the [Boundary canyon battlefield], the news that he might possess a treasure on his body had already spread out all around. There were many people coveting after this ‘treasure’. It was very likely that they would act against him secretly.

“I won’t go to Azure Phoenix academy.” Ye Qingyu said with determination. “Even if I leave white Deer academy, I won’t go to Azure Phoenix.”

“Eh? Why?” Hearing these words, Hon Kong finally turned around. On his face that was like a jade stone, there was a trace of surprise. With a smile, “Could it be that what you are really interested in, is the Divine Phoenix academy? The difficult is very great.”

Ye Qingyu shook his head. “It’s not the Divine Phoenix academy. The reason I don’t want to go to the Azure Phoenix is because I do not like what they have done during their stay in White Deer academy. As the saying goes, a master for one day is a father for the rest of you life. Even if I depart from here, I will forever remember the fact that I walked out from the White Deer academy.”

Hon Kong after hearing this, began to chuckle loudly.

“Good! Well said. Little fellow, I am beginning to appreciate you more and more.....Then have you thought about where you want to go?”

Ye Qingyu hearing this, lightly shook his head. “I have not yet made my decision regarding this matter.”

Hon Kong looked at the youth that he himself had allowed to enter the White Deer academy, his mood unprecedentedly turning for the better. “As the new Dean of the White Deer academy, I am really gratified to hear such words. Little kid, you are the most exceptional student I have ever seen. I suddenly want to say these words: Today you might be proud because you came from White Deer academy, but perhaps one day, White Deer academy will be proud because of you.”

Even with Ye Qingyu’s thick skin and vanity, he felt embarrassed after receiving such praise. He began laughing: “I’m not as great as you make me out to be.....oh, that’s right, from what you just said, you are the Dean of the White Deer academy right now?” As he said, Ye Qingyu’s jaw could not help but drop.

“En, you’ve guessed right. A change has occurred within the academy. The decree of the Emperor of the country has already been passed down. Three days later, I will become the fourth Dean of this academy.” Hon Kong nodded his head.

Ye Qingyu’s heart was extremely shaken.

Then Hon Kong continued: “Fine, lets not speak of such messy things. Let’s speak instead about things regarding you. In truth, there’s a letter for you that I received half a month ago. I have always hesitated whether I should hand it over to you, but from the current situation, this does not seem like a bad choice.”

As he said this, a golden ray flashed by.

Ye Qingyu’s hand stretched through the air, grabbing that streak of golden light.

It was a pale yellow letter written in the military style.

On the letter, in the recipient’s position, there was Ye Qingyu’s name written on it.

“A letter coming from the army? That’s strange. When did I have friends within the army?” Ye Qingyu was slightly confused, but he thought of a name in the next instant. He abruptly became overjoyed, his heart could not help but be emotionally moved.

Wen Wan!

It must be Wen Wan!

Wen Wan was stationed at the Youyan pass, he must be a military officer by now.

This letter, must be written by that conceited and vane person, that crude fellow.

Ye Qingyu could not wait to tear open the letter. Under the light of the setting sun, he began to read it.

After ten breaths, Ye Qingyu had finished reading the letter. His expression became strange.

“Old Wen is really trying to sway me to enlist in the army in the letter?”

Although this fellow talked about many things without getting to the point in the letter, but there was only one central meaning. It was to invite Ye Qingyu to give up learning from the White Deer academy and to head towards the Youyan pass, to defend the borders along with him. The letter had many enticements and temptations, firmly believing that if Ye Qingyu headed towards the border he would receive far more opportunities to temper and grow.

“What about it, have you finished reading?” Hon Kong had a smile on his face. “Little fellow, what is your thinking?”

Ye Qingyu thought for a while, then nodded his head. “I want to go.”

“You really want to go?”

“I really want to go.”

“You have to consider carefully. Once you enter the Youyan pass, without any incidents, you cannot leave without serving for at least eight or ten years.” Hon Kong said with a serious expression.

Contrary to expectations , Ye Qingyu was unprecedentedly calm and tranquil. “I’ve already decided.”

Wen Wan’s letter, had allowed Ye Qingyu to suddenly feel that the path before him had brightened up.

He believed that this was absolutely a good choice.

Seeing Ye Qingyu’s gaze was becoming more and more determined, Hon Kong knew that the youth had in such a brief moment, already made his decision.

Hon Kong began chuckling loudly. “Half a month ago, when I received this letter that came from the borders, I had already guessed what Wen Wan wanted to do. At that time, I felt that the Youyan pass was not a very good choice for you. So I have always kept this letter stored away without handing it to you. But things change with the passage of time. From the situation right now, perhaps Wen Wan’s way of doing things is correct. Your martial heart, is the path of the Asura. In your life, you will experience much killing and slaughter. Perhaps going to the army, is a good choice.”

Ye Qingyu was able to sense a dense care for him contained in the words of Hon Kong. With appreciation in his heart, he bowed in thanks.

Hon Kong smiled. “No need to thank me. Since you have decided to go within the military, then this matter is settled. In recent times with the war occurring the way it is, the Youyan pass is hard pressed. The country wants to enlist more and more men to serve in the army. The first batch of enlistees should leave in approximately ten days. I will help you manage all procedures. You should return and prepare well, and also settle the matters within your house. Ten days later, you will be setting off.”

After Ye Qingyu said another round of thanks, he left the room.

He stood at the steps of the entrance, surveying in the distance. The setting sun of the horizon had finally sunk into the endless darkness, with the last of the faint dark red still able to be seen. The age of intersection between darkness and light, was about to descend.

## Chapter 111 – Before Leaving (1)

---

In the next few days after this, Ye Qingyu really rushed to settle everything within the Ye mansion.

Three days later, the decree of the Emperor that Hon Kong would become the fourth Dean of White Deer academy was formally announced to the entire city. This caused an commotion that was neither large nor small. This represented, that the previous great teacher of the first years, would completely become one of the three major players of Deer city.

For those well informed influential and noble families, they had nearly digested the news of this appointment, the initial shock close to gone. Everywhere around the city, there were many people who was unable to understand this appointment. Why was it that a great teacher of the first years became the Dean, and not the great elders who already possessed a high position and status?

The city became more and more restless.

Hidden currents moved.

Such news from Ye Qingyu's perspective, was unquestionably a great and fortunate incident.

Entrusting the safety of the Ye mansion, as well as the various properties of the Ye family to Hon Kong who was now one of the three big shots of the city, represented that there was basically not a need to worry anymore. Originally Ye Qingyu was thinking of a method to to

settle Registrar Liu Yuancheng and Sun Yufu, these two calamities. But from the current situation, there was not such a need any longer.

Hon Kong did not refuse Ye Qingyu's request.

“You don't need to thank me right now. If there's one day that the White Deer academy encounters trouble, I hope that the you in the future will be able to come to our aid. That will be thanks enough.” Hon Kong said with a smile.

Ye Qingyu naturally promised to do so.

If there really was such a day, then of course he would extend his aid.

Ye Qingyu also thought of an unresolved matter. It was regarding that old fellow who had appeared in the Grievance Hall and in the living quarters of the second year area, that tall and thin teacher. With a violent disposition, every time he appeared he gave Ye Qingyu a beating that caused lumps to appear all on his body. But he had helped Ye Qingyu to combine his body and his inner yuan without any imperfections. He was a strange person that Ye Qingyu had not seen during this period of time. Before leaving, he wanted to at least see him and say his thanks for what he had done for him.

Ye Qingyu had originally thought, that regarding this old fellow, Hon Kong would at least have some idea as to who he was.

But who would have thought that after considering for a while, Hon Kong shook his head. “Perhaps you have remembered wrongly. I can very

responsibly say to you, that there is not such a person in White Deer academy.”

“What?” Ye Qingyu was greatly surprised. “How is this possible?”

Hon Kong said: “These days, because of that fact that I am taking over various matters of the academy, I have completely tidied up the roll of register for every teacher in the academy. My memory cannot be wrong. On the list, there is absolutely not such a person. ”

Ye Qingyu was dumbfounded.

Just what was this?

That tall and thin old teacher was evidently wearing the robes of the academy’s teachers when Ye Qingyu met him. And in a place like the Grievance hall where security was extremely tight, he could come and go as he wanted. Was he really not a person belonging to the White Deer academy?

This was something that was far too peculiar.

“I will investigate this matter in detail.” Hon Kong was able to sense the seriousness of this matter. To think that there would be such a strange person in the academy and that even he was not aware of this existence.

Afterwards, the two discussed about some other matters, then Ye Qingyu said farewell.

On the way back to Ye mansion, Ye Qingyu thought about the dates and realised that tomorrow was the day that the expedition of Azure Phoenix academy would leave Deer city. Remembering what he had promised Xu Ge, that no matter what his final decision was he would notify him of his choice. This was the most basic courtesy.

The temporary residence of the Azure Phoenix academy was right next to White Deer academy.

As Ye Qingyu came to outside the entrance, he coincidentally bumped into the Xu Ge walking out of the residence.

“Eh? Senior brother Ye, you’ve come. This is too great, I was just about to go and find you.” Seeing Ye Qingyu, a delighted expression instantly appeared on Xu Ge’s face, quickly rushing forwards to say his greetings.

“Junior brother Xu, I have come here looking for you.” Ye Qingyu saw this was the opportune moment, and that he no longer needed to go in search for Xu Ge. He notified Xu Ge of his final decision.

A evidently disappointed expression crept on Xu Ge’s face. “This is really such a pity. I was originally hoping that I would be able to drink and discuss martial arts with senior brother Ye.” One was able to see that after the battle of the boundary canyon battlefield, heartfelt admiration had really been born within Xu Ge for Ye Qingyu. “But since senior brother Ye has made his decision, then we shall not force you. We will definitely meet again later if we are fated. ”

Ye Qingyu expressed his thanks with a smile.

Xu Ge asked again: “Then does senior brother Ye prepare to stay at White Deer academy?”

“No, I’ve decided to answer the enlistment of the country, to head towards Youyan pass.” Ye Qingyu did not hide anything from Xu Ge. For such a matter, the country would very quickly transmit this news through official military papers and channels. If there were people that used their heads to inquire about this information, they would very quickly find out. Concealing this information was pointless.

“Entering the army?” Xu Ge was shocked. Evidently he had not expected that Ye Qingyu would make such a decision.

Compared to the peaceful environment of the academy, the army was much harsher with the military rules much more strict. And the Youyan pass was a dangerous place where battles went unbroken year after year. The human race and the demon race would often kill and slaughter each other, all kinds of different forces snapping at each other. There was an extremely high mortality rate. Nearly every moment, every minute, every second there would be a expert falling.....Xu Ge possessed a high opinion about himself. But even he absolutely would not have the courage to enter such a location.

“En, perhaps the environment within the military will be more suitable for me.” Ye Qingyu smiled, expressing his thanks yet again and turned to leave.

Xu Ge stood at the entrance, seeing Ye Qingyu off until he disappeared in the crowd far away. There was a hard to describe feeling within his

heart.

He shook his head and prepared to return. Just as he turned around, he nearly knocked into a figure standing behind him.

“Elder Chen?” Seeing this figure, Xu Ge rushed to say his greetings.

The person called Elder Chen, seemed to be around sixty years of age and had grizzled hair. A gold silk hair band held his hair together. His long eyebrows were like blades, with long oblique eyes and possessing a tall and sturdy body. His entire person radiated with a hard to describe baleful and biting cold atmosphere. Like a naked blade, there was an extreme imposing feeling emitting from him. He was namely the highest person in charge of the visiting expedition of the Azure Phoenix academy this time.

He was looking at the place Ye Qingyu disappeared, as if he was thinking of something.

After a short while.

“He declined?” Elder Chen asked.

Xu Ge nodded his head. 。

Of course he understood, who the ‘he’ in Elder Chen’s words was.

Elder Chen gave a faint smile. “It’s a pity. A pity that a genius will be

lost.”

.....

.....

The next few days after, Ye Qingyu stayed within the residence to focus and train.

In these several days, Ye Qingyu had once again managed to successfully consolidate a yuan qi kindling. He was able to plant within his body the fourth yuan qi kindling. It only needed the accumulation of a period of time, absorbing yuan qi of heaven and earth during this duration. Once the yuan qi in his body had concentrated to a certain level, then he could begin to excavate another Spirit spring. The days where he would enter the realm of four Spirit springs, were not far off.

It was only that in these days, the crowd surrounding the Ye mansion began to increase.◦

It was unknown where the young man in charge had managed to find so many men. They nearly completely covered the outside of the Ye residence, causing the surroundings of the Ye residence to be jam packed.

The patrols of the [Capture barracks] had already chased them away several times without too much effect. They would simply disperse and gather, disperse and gather again. By Ye Qingyu’s estimate, there were at least around three or four hundred people. All of them were idle ruffians with many beggars wearing ragged and incomplete clothing mixed in.

Once the winter season set in, cold and hunger was enough to make many people take risks. Even for half a bun, they were willing to place their life in danger. Normally there were very little people who dared to surround a residence in the wealthy district because there was a danger of being captured and executed. But once winter hit, there were simply far too many people who were not afraid of dying.

There were several times that Ye Qingyu's killing intent nearly struck out again.

But after seeing the faces, that due to hunger and the biting cold, had become completely apathetic, he abandoned such a thought. The beggars only wanted to earn a little bit of food to feed their family, even if he had the Asura killing martial heart, at this time his heart could not harden.

They were only a pitiful group of people forced to do this by the bitterness of life.

Ye Qingyu managed to restrain himself for the moment.

Qin Lan and the servants of the residence was somewhat frightened and scared.

In these past days, there would often be scenes of people throwing dead cats and dogs over the walls of the residence, scaring the little servant girls so much that they began crying.

The guards of the residence were only five or six people. Even if they did not sleep, they had more work than they could handle.

Ye Qingyu's instructions were for the others not to pay attention to such matters. He told the others to burn the dead rats and the like that were thrown over and just ignore the commotion.

But after several consecutive days of this occurring, everyone was enraged in the mansion. If not for Ye Qingyu's obstruction, perhaps they would have rushed out in anger.

Another several days passed.

Hon Kong sent someone to inform Ye Qingyu, that the matters regarding the Youyan pass had nearly been settled. But because Ye Qingyu was the inheritor of the brass heroic badge, there were some special procedures that would cause the whole process to be slightly delayed. Perhaps he would not set off with the first batch of recruited soldiers. The departure would be delayed for several days, telling Ye Qingyu to patiently wait.

Ye Qingyu was not in a hurry.

He utilised every minute and second in the residence to train, absorbing yuan qi of heaven and earth. He was preparing to excavate the fourth spirit spring.

Another two days had passed.

Another great snow had fallen in Deer city.

The Ye mansion was still surrounded by the surging crowd. Such chaos had persisted for such a long time that even the patrols of the [Capture barracks] did not pay attention to this commotion anymore. After all, time after time of them coming had no effect whatsoever. The disordered citizens were like flies; after chasing them off for a while, they would disperse but very quickly flock back yet again.

The time was midnight.

Ye Qingyu had his eyes closed. He stood with his legs apart in the Determination garden, displaying his naked torso. The steam emitting from his flesh was like a jade pagoda, an intangible mist lingering around his body.

The clouds within the skies were dark and gloomy.

Without any wind.

The world was completely dark.

As the practice of the nameless breathing technique ended, Ye Qingyu opened his eyes. ◦

Sensing the increasingly vigorous inner yuan within his body, a satisfied expression appeared on Ye Qingyu's face.◦

The nameless breathing technique his father had passed down had an incomparable efficacy in regards to the growth of his inner yuan. Compared to the inner yuan cultivation techniques passed on in the

White Deer academy, it was many times more profound. Ye Qingyu trained relentlessly every day, and his inner yuan grew extremely rapidly. If things continued on at such a rate, in approximately twenty days time, he would be able to excavate his fourth Spirit spring.

He gradually exhaled a breath of murky air.

A clamour and din indistinctly emitted from outside the residence.

A cold light streaked by within Ye Qingyu's eyes.

“The time is about right. It's about time I took care of this group of clowns.””

He returned to his room and changed into clothing fit for acting in the night. Wearing the bronze Asura devil mask<sup>1</sup> that he had prepared before, he walked out of the Ye mansion without the slightest of sounds. Like a wisp of green smoke, he disappeared in the night.

-----

1. What I imagine the bronze Asura mask to look like [Mask](#) ↵

## Chapter 112 – The Shadow Of The Bronze Asura

---

Outside the Ye residence.

Several hundreds of people were gathered on the streets where the accumulated snow had turned into ice. They encircled the streets all around the Ye residence.

Some people even went as far as to erect crude tents to shelter themselves from the snow. A couple even lit fires, huddling and discussing in low voices beside these fires.

The crowd grouped together in twos and threes. Snowflakes drifted floated through the black night. The air was extremely chilly.

The clothes that these people were wearing was simple and thin, ragged and shabby garments covering their body. Every one of them was as thin as a match, malnourished and sickly in appearance looking like beggars. There was a lack of life in their eyes, as if they were simply walking corpses. They had already surrounded the Ye residence for several days, so had made the decision to just to camp here instead of leaving during the night.

Between the crowd, there would occasionally be a young man who was wearing thick cotton clothing. He seemed much more vigorous from his appearance than the other people, his status not as dire as the other people. There was a smell of alcohol wafting from his body. From time to time, he would loudly order people to throw dead rats, bricks and the like over the wall.

Further from this.

A thousand metres in a Western direction.

In a seemingly normal stone house of a commoner, the candles and lamps were lit inside.

Between the seams of the wooden window of the stone house, there was the fragrance of alcohol and meat wafting out.

There were five or six people sitting within the house wearing bright clothes, their thick garments isolating them from the frigid cold. They sat on the ground, surrounding a low table covered with wine and meat. They were currently loudly playing drinking games, everyone of them with red faces. Drinking and gambling, the house was bustling with noise and excitement.

“Hahaha, now that I think back, its enough to make me laugh to death. Your father I was nearly scared to a halt by that little bastard in the Ye family.” The leading young man, with furrowed brows and blazing eyes, was namely the person sent flying by Ye Qingyu that day. He was called Tao Mocheng and was a famous trouble maker in the Northern district. As he said this, he gulped down a large mouthful of alcohol. “Saying he would kill someone. I peh! Like I would be afraid of him. Haha, who doesn’t know how to tell lies. To dare kill someone in the streets, he wouldn’t do so unless he is a retard.”

“The little thing called Ye Qingyu, only did this to scare people off.” Another young man said with a cold smile. “We have surrounded his

residence for so many days, the little thing doesn't even dare to let out a fart. I don't even know how many dead rats we have thrown over, yet he is still suffering in silence.”

Hahahaha!

The group began roaring with laughter.

“This time, we are on the side of morality and righteous. Just how many eyes of the entire city are looking into this matter? This little brat himself has an unclear background, being involved with that demonic girl of darkness. The crotch of his trousers is covered with shit<sup>1</sup>, just what can he do to us? Especially for those rich nobility, the thing most important to them is their face. Hehe, as long as we grab at his seven inch spot<sup>2</sup>, even if Ye Qingyu is a poisonous snake, he does not dare to do anything to us. ”

Someone said with a large guffaw.

The leading young man Tao Mocheng also chuckled loudly, excitement written in his face. “In reality, this really is a great business transaction for us. We are only exploiting those beggars and the poor to risk their lives for us, and we can so easily and openly obtain money from those noble families. Hehe, as long as we give those stinky beggar some buns, they will do their utmost to work for us.....”

Another person said: “I wonder just how can the money of young long Sun and the other nobility's last?”

The young leader of the group Tao Mocheng replied with a grin. “What are you afraid of, we can definitely earn a large sum. Sun Yufu and the other nobilities, right now hates the little brat surnamed Ye awfully much. They will not give up till they finish playing with him to his death. From this matter, I think that it is not only Sun Yufu that is involved in this plan. Otherwise why doesn’t the [Capture barracks] truly interfere? In these days, they have only pretended to act to put up an appearance, otherwise they would have long started to arrest people.....Therefore we do not need to worry at all and think about other matters. If this situation continues on, what we can obtain is money. ”

“Hehe, that little brat dares to offend young lord Sun. I think that he is dead for sure.” A robust and prosperous fat person began to snicker. “There are several women in the residence, that are damn tender and delicate. If we are able to taste such fresh delicacies.....hehe, I am willing to become a ghost if so.”

The group of people immediately began laughing heartily .

“I think that his matter is possible. Hehe, once Sun Yufu and the old masters of the noble families play with this little brat to his death, we can do whatever we want with the women in that residence. Haha, after we are done with them, we can sell them to a low grade brothel, and we will also be able to obtain a large sum.” Tao Mocheng began chuckling loudly.

“Boss, speak a little quieter. Young lord Sun and his people is about to arrive, don’t let them hear this.” A young man reminded Tao Mocheng in a low voice.

The group nodded their agreement.

At this time, there was the sound of footsteps coming from outside. Mixed in with this, was a strange whimpering. As if someone wanted to scream loudly, but their mouth was covered.

Then three or four people was able to be seen, sneakily carrying two coarsely woven sacks.

The strange whimpering sound, namely came from the rough burlap sacks.

“Chen Er, you guys have returned? Did you manage to get them?” Tao Mocheng eyes brightened, rushing to ask .

“Boss, I’ve managed to grab a hold of them. Haha, this time it’s a bountiful harvest, I guarantee you’ll be satisfied. It’s two young girls. After we have washed them up, they’ll be fresh and vivid. Who would have thought that in this group of stinky beggars, there would be such high class goods.” The person called Chen Er was crafty looking man. He untied the strings of the burlap bags.

Two shivering and quivering figures, rolled out from the coarse sacks.

It was two kidnapped girls in the prime of their youth. Their hands and feet were tied and their mouth gagged.

Under the muddled yellow light of the fire, the two young girls with ragged clothing panicked and struggled. The cheeks because of their alarm had practically morphed into a different shape. Under the light of

the blaze, there was a certain lovely pitifulness about their appearance. They looked to be around fifteen or sixteen years of age. Their physique was already extremely exquisite, and the places where the ragged clothing did not cover, glowed with a white jade like brilliance under the light, the skin being considerably white.

Tao Mocheng and the others had a good look, their eyes going wide.

“Hahaha, who would have thought that within a group of beggars, there would be such goods. Chen Er, you have done well.” Tao Mocheng broke out into loud laughter.

Chen Er had a face filled with pride, and said with a flattering smile. “Not to hide it from boss you, I have already observed them for several days. These two girls are people from outside the city, and hid within the crowd so they could not escape easily. They are really pretty. They thought that by covering their faces with ashes, they would be able to fool me. This is far too innocent. During the day, I’ve already scouted out the place, and during the night I found two of my brothers to kidnap them. Haha, boss, what about it. This two little girls are not bad. After you have tasted them, you should let us brothers enjoy them too.”

Tao Mocheng began laughing loudly, walking forward and directly lifting one of the girls. “Good, good, your father I have not touched a woman for three or four days now. These two girls is just perfect to allow everyone invigorate themselves. Old rules goes, after we’ve finished with them, we are going to sell them to a low class brothel. They can fetch a good price too. You bastards, dont be too crazy and be light. Don’t completely ruin these two young girls.”

Everyone in the room began to hoot with laughter.

The men surrounded them, everyone one of their eyes glinting with a depraved and lustful light.

“Wuwuwu.....”

The two young girls struggled for their lives, despair written in the bright and large eyes glinting under the light of the fire.

“Hehe, your father I will be the first one to savour them.....” Tao Mocheng grabbed the young girl in his hands. Accompanied by a ripping sound, he tore apart the clothing. There originally was not much on the body of the young girl in the first place. Snowy white skin was exposed.

The entire room was filled with an extra layer of gorgeous moonlight.

The people in the stone house felt their eyes widening.

Just when had they seen such a woman with jade like bones and icy skin?

There was practically no difference from the young ladies of the noble families.◦

Chen Er and the others' throats shook, swallowing their saliva. They could already not wait to rush forward. After waiting half a moment, they unexpectedly saw the Tao Mocheng that was consumed with desire did not have any further actions. He stood dumbly, transfixed where he was,

not even moving in the slightest. As if he was trapped within a formation. His gaze was fixed in the direction of the door, shock and fear written clearly in his eyes.

What had happened?

Everyone turned their gaze towards the door.

Who knew when, but a silhouette wearing the bronze mask of the Asura had appeared at the doors.

The main killing Asura.

The bronze mask of the Asura in the colour of the night illuminated by the burning firelight in the house seemed to be a Death God here to reap life away at first glance. The black tight fitting clothes in the pitch black night made him seem like a ghost walking through the night. The dancing snowflakes in the air brought with it a icy chill that seeped into their bones, directly attacking them.

No one knew, exactly when this black shadow appeared.

He was like a spirit that came from the depths of hell.

The people with little bravery in this crowd, after seeing this Asura ghost shadow immediately began sharply screeching.

And such a scream, after just sounding, halted in a moment.

A ray of sword light floated, piercing through his throat.

The taste of blood, began spreading in this narrow and cramped stone house.

“You.....are you a man or a ghost?” Another person asked trembling, nearly scared out of his wits.◦

What answered him, was still the ray of sword light.

Blood blossomed through the air.

The figure of the man fell.

“Motherfucker, what wild ghost is this that they would act against me and my brothers. There is no need to afraid everyone. Rush forward all at once, and slaughter him.” Tao Mocheng had finally recovered, his eyes flickering about. Biting his teeth, he kicked the wooden table in front of him. ◦

Peng!

The wooden table flew, the liquid on it splattering everywhere.

The other three people woke from their nightmare, Taking out the sharp blades at their waists, cold lights flickered within the stone house. Everyone of them had ferocious expressions on their faces , charging

forward.

And at this time, the leading Tao Mocheng had already left. Turning around to run, he ducked and charged out from the windows. He absolutely did not dare to fight with this monster directly. He wanted his comrades to attract the attention of the bronze Asura ghost shadow so that he could escape. From his perspective, even if everyone fought together, they would not be the opponent of that person.

Xiu!

Another ray of sword light brightened in the house.

The wooden table was sliced apart without any sounds.

The figures of the five or six people that had rushed over had also frozen.

The bronze Asura shadow waved his hand.◦

Tao Mocheng felt that he had lost control of his body, a invisible force dragging him back. He heavily landed on the ground, crashing onto the broken bowls on the floor. With a bang, his waist nearly snapped apart. The pain was so great that he could not even scream. He had a sensation that his body did not belong to him.

Tao Mocheng watched with wide eyes as the bronze Asura ghost shadow walked closer and closer, step by step. It sat down on the chairs of the stone house, not saying a word.

This action made it seem as if it this really was a ghost that came from hell.

Putong. Putong.

The Chen Er and others who had their bodies frozen suddenly trembled. Blood spurted from them, everyone of them falling down.

So they had long been struck by the sword, completely dead.

Tao Mocheng felt a fear that he had never experienced before. Like a tide, it completely drowned him.

-----

1. in trouble himself ↵
2. mythical weak point of a snake ↵

## Chapter 113 – The Useless Words Are Finished; Go On Your Way

---

As an infamous troublemaker in the North city district, Tao Mocheng had performed many bloody atrocities in his life before. He had also experienced many dangerous situations, with many situations that his life was hanging by one thread. But even at the most dangerous of times, he had never been so frightened like he was now.

He felt like his heart had been seized by this infernal evil spirit, infinite terror making him have difficulty breathing.

But the bronze Asura devil did not seem like it any any intentions to strike from the beginning. He did not even give Tao Mocheng a passing glance.

He was only sitting there silently.

The fire in the house flickered and faded incessantly.

As the pale yellow light of the firewood shined on his figure, there was a horrifying shadow behind his shadow.

Time passed second by second.

The two young girls that were kidnapped had never experienced such a situation before. Terrified and frightened, they had long fainted after seeing blood.

Tao Mocheng did not dare to move in the slightest. He felt as if he was in a long lasting nightmare, pain and fear gripping him. Cold sweat dripped down like starch paste, completely drenching his entire body. From his perspective, time passed by exceedingly slowly. As if this everlasting night would never end and dawn would not arrive.

Ten minutes later.

The sound of footsteps came from outside the door.

Tao Mocheng eyes brightened.

He knew that this was definitely Sun Yufu arriving.

The young master of the Registrar office had finally arrived.

In the three days previous to this, Sun Yufu would always appear. At the time of midnight, this young lord Sun would bring his guards to the stone house, bringing the payment along as well as enquiring about progress. According to the time right, it was about the moment he should appear tonight.

He must have brought experts to accompany him. Was it possible that he would be able to defeat the bronze Asura?

Tao Mocheng was finally able to see a glimmer of hope.

As he thought of this, he was about to open his mouth and scream for help.

And at this time, as if the bronze Asura was able to read his mind, the mask turned around and gave him a glance.

Without knowing why, when Tao Mocheng saw the smile that was not a smile behind the bronze Asura mask, he abruptly shivered. He did not dare emit another sound again.

Ziya !

Accompanied by the light noise, the door of the stone house was pushed open.

Three people walked in.

The leading person was namely Sun Yufu.

After a month had passed, the shoulder injury of Sun Yufu had already pretty much completely recovered. Perhaps due to the reason that he had lost so much blood in that incident, his face seemed somewhat weak and pallid compared to his first appearance. The body that was already weak because of alcohol and women seemed even weaker now. But he still had the appearance of someone with a heavily powdered face, a fragrance of orchid lingering on his body. Even in the cold icy night where there was heavy snow, he was still carrying a jade folding fan in his hands.

This rich young master, was namely laughing about something with

the people beside him. He had completely recovered his arrogant and despotic disposition.

But as he entered through the door, he saw the scene. Looking at the state of the house, he was dumbfounded.

“Just what has happened?”

The two experts that were like guards standing behind him, immediately went forward and blocked the front of Sun Yufu.

These two people were the two experts that Liu Yuancheng had organised to be placed beside Sun Yufu.

After Sun Yufu had met with mishap last time, Liu Yuancheng because of some other reasons did not take revenge on Ye Qingyu. But he had planned ahead for a rainy day, using a large amount of money to hire two experts of the Spirit spring stage to follow beside Sun Yufu and not leave him unattended at all times. This was all done to protect his adopted son. Liu Lei had already died; if Sun Yufu was to meet with an accident, the descendants of Liu Yuancheng could be said to be completely exterminated.

“Who is it”

The two guards, one left and right , pressed forward with a chilly expression.

As the saying goes, those who came did not have good intentions and

people of good intentions would not come. The sensitive instincts of the the two who had experienced hundreds of battles told them that their was a treacherous danger in the stone house.

Fire !

Corpses !

Fresh blood !

Half naked and unconscious young girls.

Under the light of the fire, the bronze Asura was like nothingness, as if there was nothing there at all. He sat there without breathing, without heart beat, and also without the fluctuation of yuan qi.

If their eyes did not tell them of his existence, they would not be able to realise such an existence was there. Just by using their yuan qi to sense, they really would not have been able to feel such a person. The two bodyguards was overwhelmed with shock, extremely alert and vigilant. With their strength, they were not able to smell the bloody stench in the house, nor sense the yuan qi fluctuation within the house before entering. This was evidence that the power of this bronze Asura was vaguely higher than theirs.

Sun Yufu also at the first instance took several steps backwards in retreat.

At this time, the Bronze Asura slowly stood up.

And the Tao Mocheng lying on the ground, was able to see under the bronze Asura mask. In the apathetic eyes, there was a shred of a strange smiling expression.

This type of feeling was as if ....

The beginning of the feast of massacre!

Everyone felt their vision blurring. 。

The bronze Asura took a step and arrived in front of the two body guards, simply punching out both his fists.

Such an attack, simply could not be counted as any sort of technique. Because when the bronze Asura attacked, he did not have any intentions of defending, his entire body open to counter attacks. There were weak points present all around his body.

“Looking to die! ! ”

“Arrogance!”

The two body guards roared in rage at the same time.

Such a method of attacking, was far too conceited.

Yuan qi activated and fluctuated around the two of them, lights flickering. A powerful force exploded, strong winds whistled in the stone house. Long blades unsheathed from their waists and in the dreadful friction sound of the blade and the scabbard, the tips of the cold blade shot through the air like electricity, instantly twisting apart the dim light of the fire.

The house was completely covered with the light of the chilling blades.

And what met them was only a pair of fists made from flesh.

Boom!

The long blades and the fist impacted against each other without any techniques to speak of.

Peng!

The silver tips cracked.

The two blades that had been tempered over a hundred times were shattered.

As the fragments of the blade shattered in the air, there was a beautiful scenery like that a silver firework bursting apart.

The fist was not injured in the slightest, and did not even pause at all, striking the chest of the two bodyguards.

Kala! Kala!

It was the sounds of ribs cracking.

The two bodyguards gave a grunt, only able to sense a vast power exploding from their chest. In an instant they were sent soaring backwards, landing on the stone wall behind them, breaking apart the wall and continuing to soar outside. Who knew how many bones had been broken in their bodies.

“How is this possible. I.....have already entered into the second Spirit spring stage, you can use one punch.....to defeat me.....just who are you?”

“You are [Two fists striking the Heaven] Lin Yilong? Within Deer city, only Li Yilong has such a power contained within their fists. It must be you!””

The two guards sank to the floor.

The bodyguard on the left sputtered blood madly, struggling to look towards the Bronze Asura. He and his comrade's power had long entered the realm of the two Spirit springs. Within the entire Deer city, apart from those experts that were long famous, who would be able to so easily defeat them with just one step and one fist?

Within the list of famous experts, only Lin Yilong had such a strength contained in his fists.

The bronze Asura did not make any sort of response.

His gaze, gradually moved and ultimately fell on Sun Yufu's body.

The light of the gaze was ruthless, like a cat catching a mouse.

“You.....” Sun Yufu was not an idiot. Seeing that the situation was not going well, he turned to run.

An invisible huge suction came from behind him, stopping in his tracks and dragging him backwards through the air. As he struck the half broken wall with a crash, it was unknown how many pieces his bones were broken into in that instant. He was so scared that he was nearly driven mad, not even feeling the pain. Screaming madly, “No, don't kill me. I am the son of Liu Yuancheng, don't kill me....There must be some mistake, a mistake, we are not acquainted.....””

“Haha.....”

A icy mocking tone sounded.

The was the first sound that had came from the mouth of the bronze Asura. ◦

“Hush ! ” He performed a gesture that told them not to speak. A very special sound came from behind the mask, as if it was a voice used to coax little children. Lightly said, “Be obedient. First don't speak, let me speak. When I finish, you can speak.””

Tao Mocheng in this instant, had a strange sensation. As if the bronze Asura had suddenly dropped his killing aura, completely changing into a different person. From a ferocious ghost of slaughter, he became a ruffian. Within his words, there was a similar sense of pride from a crafty prank succeeding.

“No, no.....don’t kill me, don’t.....Save me!” Sun Yufu was scared witless, beginning to scream nonsense.

The bravery of this wealthy young lord, was so small that it was pitiful.

“You are really not obedient in the slightest. The bronze Asura mumbled in dissatisfaction, then casually kicked out.

Xiu!

In the sharp piercing sound of air being broken, a little rock shot out, shooting directly into the mouth of Sun Yufu.

Sun Yufu let out a wretched cry, feeling his mouth going numb, then completely lost all sensation. He wanted to speak, but the sounds coming from his mouth were meaningless low and hoarse syllables. He absolutely could not say any complete words.

“I’ve already said, don’t speak. Listen to me. Why are you not obedient in the slightest?” The bronze Asura seemed to be angry.

Sun Yufu wanted to scream but he could not.

Tao Mocheng was even worse, his entire body quivering, not even daring to let out a fart.

The bronze Asura walked over, towards the two bodyguards that had fainted. After observing for a moment, he supplemented them each with a strike on their foreheads, confirming that both of them were unconscious and would not hear his words right after. Then he picked up a broken blade discarded on the ground, adding an extra slice on the corpses of Chen Er and the other ruffians, confirming that they were completely dead. He then threw away the broken blade.

He dragged Tao Mocheng up, throwing him beside Sun Yufu.

Afterwards, he crouched in front of the two. Ye Qingyu saying slowly and orderly: “Someone once said, that when the times is right to act, you should just act, and you must not delay foolishly for no purpose. So I originally didn’t want to speak these foolish words, and just crisply slaughter you with one strike. But after considering, I spent so much effort dressing up as a god and playing the devil for half the day that seems such a waste. Without being able to see your regretful and suffering expression, and enjoying the pleasure of my plan succeeding, how meaningless is this.....So lets speak, let us discuss the entire process of development.”

Sun Yufu whimpered and struggled madly, as if he had something he wanted to say. But it was a pity that his mouth of teeth and tongue was crippled, not able to form words.

“No, no, no, you must have recognised the wrong people, we did not offend you before.....” Tao Mocheng was so frightened that snot and tears flowed down together from the front of his face.

The bronze Asura began chuckling grimly. “Recognise the wrong people? How is this possible, I remembered your face very well on the first day. Things that act recklessly, you’ve already surrounded my residence for over twenty days, would I be mistaken?”

The colour of Tao Mocheng’s face completely changed.

He finally realised who the person in front of him was.

“What about it? Are you scared? Do you think that I am still threatening you with empty words?” The Ye Qingyu wearing the mask began to laugh out loud. “Hahaha, look at your face, you are so scared that you are crying. Weren’t you very arrogant beforehand....this is too invigorating, such a feeling is really too invigorating.”

“I.....I .....I.....” Tao Mocheng was so frightened that he bowed down, his head kowtowing like pounding garlic, not even able to utter another word.

At this time Tao Mocheng was so regretful that he could die. He hated the fact that he could not hack Sun Yufu into pieces for dragging him into this.

Was it not said that the most important thing for wealthy people was face?

Was it not said that a little child like Ye Qingyu, that brute was very easy to handle?

Was it not say that this plan was absolutely safe with no possibility of failure?

Was it not said.....

He did not think, that Ye Qingyu would use such a direct method to solve the problem.

“In truth, from the start, I did not really want to kill you.” Ye Qingyu waved his hands. “I originally thought, a ruffian like you, is everywhere in the city. Receiving money and acting for someone, thinking nothing but personal gain, that is your way of living. Even if this is wrong, you do not deserve to die.....”

“Yes, yes, yes, yes. What you said is right, absolutely right. I am only a ruffian, please be magnanimous, spare me.....” Tao Mocheng felt delight in his heart after hearing such words. Following the flow, he started kowtowing like grinding garlic.

Ye Qingyu patted him on the shoulder. “Wait, don’t be so happy so quickly. Wait until I finish speaking. If bowing is any use, then Snow country would have been long peaceful.....I originally didn’t want to take your life, but when I saw them.....” Ye Qingyu pointed at the two pitiful young girls that were fainted on the ground. He continued: “And hearing your words, I suddenly felt that scum like you, is better dead than alive.””

“Don’t, I don’t want to die, I.....” Tao Mocheng was horrified, his mouth opened wanting to protest.....

“And those girls that were sold into a living hell, they all said they don’t want to. Just how did you treat with them?” Ye Qingyu smiled, lightly saying. “Look, I’ve already said so much. Do you now understand why you’re going to die? Be obedient, listen to my words and go on your way in peace.”

Before he had finished.

With a strike of his palm, he struck the trembling Tao Mocheng. Like a nail, he was firmly and deeply embedded like a nail onto the soil.

This time, he thoroughly and completely stopped breathing.

Then Ye Qingyu turned his head to look towards the terror stricken Sun Yufu, taking off the bronze Asura mask from his face. Slowly walking over, with a type of smile that Sun Yufu thought was even more frightening than the devil: “It’s your turn.....En, I’ve already said so much useless words. I don’t want to make any more explanations. Seeing my face, I guess you can already die in peace.”

White foam vomited from Sun Yufu’s mouth, his eyes filled with pleading.

“The man has no intention to hurt the tiger, but the tiger has the mind to injure the man.” Ye Qingyu slowly wore his mask again. “The matter

previously, I originally did not want to pursue it anymore. But who would have thought you would look for your death by yourself and personally came to my doorsteps. I am about to leave Deer city. To leave a tumour like you behind, it will very likely affect my friends and family.....Haha, then please go on your way!”

Ye qingyu slowly lifted his hand.

At this time——

PuChi !

A light noise, then an indescribable stench emitted from Sun Yufu’s crotch.

He loudly spurted white foam, a shred of green liquid at the corner of his lips. Unexpectedly, he had taken his last breath. His courage had broken down. He was scared to his own death.

## Chapter 114 – Before Leaving (2)

---

He was so frightened he died?

He really was a complete trash.

Seeing this, Ye Qingyu could neither laugh nor cry.

He did not expect that Sun Yufu would act so arrogant and despotic, but was in reality so cowardly. But dying like that was fine too, it saved him the trouble of acting himself.

This time, it could be considered that Sun Yufu's death ended all trouble. Originally Ye Qingyu was slightly worried that after he left, Sun Yufu would act against Qin Lan and the others in the Ye residence. But at that moment, he did not have a good method to handle him. Who would have thought that this guy would come and look for his death himself, presenting himself on Ye Qingyu's doorsteps. Tonight, he had completely severed this calamity and he would not leave any concerns behind in Deer city. As for the other miscellaneous matters, there should not be any major problems with the newly appointed big player Hon Kong looking after the situation.

With a will of his heart, Ye Qingyu beckoned his hand to the corner twenty metres away.

Faint light flickered.

A pole of the [Sentry guard] flew through the air and returned to his hand.

In the page of the bronze book [Titled Fiendgod chart], as long as enough inner yuan was inserted, then four poles of [Sentry guard] could be created. The [Sentry guard] that had returned to Ye Qingyu's hands had already been placed here for over twenty days.

Only by utilising this [Sentry guard], could Ye Qingyu be well acquainted with the coming and going of this place.

According to his previous surveillance, he knew that tonight Sun Yufu and the others would definitely come and meet up with Tao Mocheng and the others to discuss their strategy after this. Therefore Ye Qingyu had attacked this evening. As the saying goes, to shoot the horse before the man and to capture the leader before the underlings. After he had killed Tao Mocheng and Sun Yufu with a thunder like method, the beggars and ruffians surrounding the Ye residence were only a direction less mob. They would slowly disperse on their own.

The moment he turned around, Ye Qingyu thought of something.

His gaze, fell on the two unconscious young girls.

If he left them here, these two pitiful girls would definitely be brought away by the Registrar office or perhaps the [Capture barracks]. They would be tortured and interrogated. Losing two sons consecutively, one could easily imagine how crazy a state Liu Yuancheng would be. He would absolutely not let go of the two girls.

Ye Qingyu shook his head, bringing the two unconscious girls away.

The colour of the night, became darker and darker.

The heavy snow drifted in the skies.

No one noticed what had happened here.

.....

.....

The second day.

There was fine weather after the snow, the morning sun illuminating the entire city.

It was a clear day that was hard to come by.

Ye Qingyu finished his morning training then went to the front hall to have breakfast along with Qin Lan, Little Grass and Qingqing.

The granddaughter of Li Shizen had already utterly become the best friend of Little Grass, their relationship progressing exceedingly well. They nearly spent every day sleeping and eating together. The two little girls possessing a similar fate, finally got to experience the joys of being around someone of their own age. Last night the little girl had followed

Little Grass back to sleep in the Ye residence, and they had already done so previously. This quickly became a custom, and Qingqing was not unfamiliar with this place anymore.

“Young master, Grandfather told me to pass on a message.” After Qingqing had finished breakfast, she abruptly came to in front of Ye Qingyu. Very seriously, she said: “He’s been enlisted to head towards the Youyan pass. It’s possible that he has to leave Taoxuan pavilion.”

“What?” Ye Qingyu was greatly shocked. “There’s such a thing occurring?”

Qingqing nodded her head. “It’s already been decided tens of days ago. Grandfather is going to go to the front lines as a medical officer, and he told me not to tell you. Today all the enlisted men will set off from Deer city. Grandfather instructed me to notify you and to thank you for all the care you have shown these days.”

“But.....” Ye Qingyu did not know what he should say. The news had come too suddenly.

Li Shizen was already over seventy years of age, and he had not practiced martial arts before. The foundation of his body was extremely poor. The Youyan pass, was a place famous for its barren lands saturated with bitter cold. For a old man to go to such a place, could his body and bones really withstand it?

Ye Qingyu was somewhat worried.

Just what were the military thinking, that they would choose such an old person to become the medical officer?

This was just simply ridiculous.

“It’s Grandfather that wants to go.” Qingqing seemed to know what Ye Qingyu was thinking, lowering her head and saying: “Grandfather said that the soldiers’ pay is very high in the front lines. He wants to use the last moment of his life, to earn some of my dowry.”

Ye Qingyu was taken aback.

Qingqing continued to speak: “I’ve tried to persuade him for so long, but it was no use. I wanted to follow my grandfather along, but Grandfather said that if I did not listen to his words, he would immediately die in front of me.....I had no other way. Young master, I heard that you’re also going to the Youyan pass. You.....at that place, could you take care of my Grandfather a little bit?”

The information that Ye Qingyu was preparing to leave Deer city had been privately passed on to Qin Lan, Little Grass and Tang San. It seemed like Qingqing also knew.

Ye Qingyu did not know what to say.

Since the matter was already decided, he was too late to change anything at this moment.

Ye Qingyu did not know what Li Shizen was thinking at all. If he stayed

in Deer city, the Ye residence would definitely not mistreat him. Staying in the Taoxuan pavilion as a doctor would definitely hold many benefits for him. He would be able to stay beside his granddaughter, and enjoy the joys of family bonds. If he needed money, then Ye Qingyu would have absolutely supported him. But if he went to the front lines at Youyan pass with his body condition, he would definitely be in a situation that he would most likely die in. This would absolutely make Qingqing feel pain so great she would not want to live anymore.

It was a pity that nothing could be changed anymore.

From the simple description of Qingqing, Ye Qingyu was able to feel that Li Shizen had already made up his mind and determination. Even if he went to persuade him right now, there would absolutely be no effect.

A strange old man.

A stubborn old man.

“Rest assured, I will do my utmost to take care of him.” Ye Qingyu could only say such words to Qingqing.

Qingqing seriously and deeply bowed.

.....

At noon time, the city began to heat with excitement.

The first batch of reinforcements heading towards the front lines of Youyan pass were setting off.

A crowd was completely packed In the main road of the Northern urban area, seeing the soldiers off.

The military and the city leader office had organised an activity to see them off, as well as some age old ceremonies.

The entire Deer city attached extreme important to the enlistment ——— in truth, according to the historical traditions of Snow country, the soldiers heading towards the front lines would receive the greatest possible respect. Because no one knew whether these people would have the opportunity to return alive. Many people understood, that the people headed towards the dangerous areas in order to protect the right of survival for their race, were heroes. They were the true warriors of this race.

Ye Qingyu was also present during the seeing off ceremonies on the street.

He brought along Qingqing to see Li Shizen off.

The old man was wearing a light chain mail, carrying a walking stick. It seemed his vitality was not bad.

After embracing his granddaughter and giving her a kiss, Li Shizen looked towards Ye Qingyu and smiled. “Young master, from now on I will have to trouble Qingqing with you. If possible, please could you take care

of this little child.....”

Ye Qingyu did not wait for him to finish. Saying straightforwardly: ”Don’t worry, from now on Qingqing will be as my sister.”

Li Shizen gave a small smile. His ancient eyes containing wisdom became much more tranquil. He patted Qingqing on her head, reluctant to part with her at all but ultimately leaving. His figured entered the flow of the army departing the city, holding his staff and setting foot on his long journey.

Such a scene of departure was occurring at every moment on both sides of the street.

The composition of the reinforcement army was slightly disordered. Not only commoners and wandering martial artists were recruited, many noble members were also enlisted.

Even though noble families had many special privileges, but when facing the recruitment of the country’s military they could not escape. According to the traditional thinking of the country, the nobles who enjoyed much more rights and power than the commoners should also accept much more responsibility. Therefore, there was a even greater reason for them to answer the call of enlistment, to head to the front lines and kill the enemy.

When the yuan qi bomb on the city gate rang three times, the seeing off ceremony had officially finished.

Under the gazes of everyone, a army that had been constructed hastily set off. No more than three thousand people, they majestically walked out the city gates of Deer city. Stepping on the vast and thick accumulated snow, they disappeared in the white horizon.

No one knew, just how many of the three thousand would be able to return.

Perhaps they would never come back.

Such scenes occurred not only in snow country, not only in the Heaven Wasteland domain. In the countless domains of the three thousand worlds to obtain their right to survive, to obtain space to live and resources, the human race had to fight. Every moment was spent in battle, every moment they were bleeding. At all times, there were countless people dying. No matter how many internal strife and conflicts there were in the history of the human race, they were always able to unite together for this purpose.

Qingqing stood next to Ye Qingyu, staring and seeing off till the army disappeared.

She did not say anything. She did not cry.

Ye Qingyu was able to feel that this little girl, had a frightening tranquillity and staunchness.

.....

The next few days, the entire Deer city was immersed in a rare peaceful state of affairs.

Ye Qingyu also undertook his last preparations to leave.

He heard that a great matter had occurred with the Registrar office. Liu Yuancheng had gone crazy and beaten to death his two most loved concubines. He was so angry after this that he had spat blood and fainted. The entire Registrar office was consumed by a mood of mourning and urgency. The reason for this was that the adopted son of Liu Yuancheng had mysteriously died.

There were all sorts of rumours in the city; that the bad deeds performed by Liu Yuancheng were too many and he had therefore received his karmic punishment. He was punished with the fate of all his descendants being exterminated.

Such rumours, made Liu Yuancheng greatly lose face within the noble families. He was somewhat not able to lift up his head in front of the nobles.

And at the same time, the beggars and ruffians gathered outside the Ye mansion began to disperse. Without the financial support and directions of Tao Mocheng and the others, the poor beggars had to spend every day in a busy state just to survive on. Just where did they have the time and effort to waste on surrounding the Ye residence.....

Contrary to expectations, the Ye residence forgot past enmities and began offering food relief outside the residence. They helped the needy, winning a large amount of public praise. The refugees who had once

threw the corpses of animals over the wall, began weeping bitter tears and admitting their mistakes. In this period of time, the prestige and reputation of the Ye family rose and grew sharply among the common people. And as for the rumours that Ye Qingyu had relations with the girl of Darkness, these gradually ceased.

“This is a good thing. The money to used to hand out food relief, were all taken from the bodies of Sun Yufu and Tao Mocheng that night. This can be considered as making the most of everything. The rumours had been suppressed and the Ye residence could be said as having completely stabilised, firmly planting its roots within the city.

Ye Qingyu could begin to feel assured.

And at this time, Hon Kong sent over someone to give news that the matters regarding Ye Qingyu had been arranged.

Different from the recruited commoners and normal nobles who headed to the front lines, Ye Qingyu was the inheritor of the heroic military medal of the country. He had a special status, and had some abnormal privileges that even nobles did not possess. Without even heading to the front lines, he was appointed as the patrolling sword envoy.

Such news, was completely outside of Ye Qingyu's calculations.

Without heading to the front lines, he was already an officer ?

Demon King Ye began laughing excitedly.

This was a good incident, a great incident.

The heroic brass badge really had such a status. This also greatly exceeded Ye Qingyu's imagination.

But as to just what kind of position the patrolling sword envoy was, or the power it possessed, Ye Qingyu was not too clear.

The second day, the official appointment of the royal court of the country arrived at Deer city.

Ye Qingyu received this appointment within White Deer academy, and finally became a person truly belonging to the country's military.

According to the instructions of the royal court, Ye Qingyu had one day to arrange things within his family. He was to set off the day after that onto his journey.

The next two days, Ye Qingyu could not be counted as too busy. The matters in the Ye residence had already been utterly arranged already. He strolled and visited all parts of the city, and again went to the White Deer academy to see teacher Hon Kong, reminiscing about former times, Hon Kong nagged and repeatedly urged about many matters. Only after that, would he let Ye Qingyu go.

And at the time he walked out from the office of Hon Kong, he coincidentally bumped into Song Qingluo. He conversed with her for a while.

After the matter regarding the little loli, there was a significant impact on the Qingluo merchant company. The business fell by a thousand metres. Because of the troubles of her family, Song Qingluo did not have the graceful bearing of she previously possessed. Her entire person became much more stable and reserved.

By the time he returned to the residence, evening had already descended.

Qin Lan had prepared a small scale midnight feast, something to see Ye Qingyu off.

All around the residence, everyone did not wish to part with this amiable young master. There were several female servants that secretly wiped away their tears. The appearance of Ye Qingyu had changed the fates of everyone. For this, he received the gratitude of everyone in the mansion.

Including the two pitiful girls that Ye Qingyu had brought back.

That night if not for Ye Qingyu's appearance, the two would definitely suffer under the poisonous hands of Tao Mocheng and the others. Their ends would have been incomparably miserable. After Ye Qingyu came, they fainted from fear and did not realise what had occurred. Ye Qingyu brought the two of them back. Qin Lan said that the residence was coincidentally lacking in people, and their appearance could be counted as a fortune, taking them in. After the two had awakened, using a little trickery and explanation, they managed to make both of them stay.

The two girls did not know that Ye Qingyu was the bronze Asura ghost shadow. They thought that it was really as Qin Lan had told them, that they had fainted in front of the entrance of the Ye residence and were rescued. With utmost gratitude, they naturally wished to stay within the Ye residence out of their own will.

After considering for a while, Ye Qingyu also agreed.

He was able to tell, that the two girls were not normal ruffians off the street. Perhaps they had some other background, and had never suffered hardship before. Their living ability was extremely poor, as if they were young ladies from a wealthy family. But they did not know any martial hearts, and was really pitiful. If he did not let them stay, they would most likely be devoured by the other ruffians until not even a scrap remained.

Time quickly passed.

The evening feast ended.

The Qingqing who had returned along with Little Grass, suddenly went in search of Ye Qingyu. ◦

“This is something my grandfather told me to hand to you.” Qingqing passed over a half metre long dark red wooden box. “He said the things inside will be useful to you.”

“What is inside?” After slight surprise, Ye Qingyu took the box and asked with a grin.

Qingqing shook her head. "I also don't know."

This made Ye Qingyu feel that something strange was up.

As Qingqing finished, she turned and left just like a little adult.

Ye Qingyu shook his head with a faint smile, lightly opening the wooden box.

A peculiar fragrance emitted from the wooden box, accompanied by a faint golden radiance.

## Chapter 115 – The Sudden Change In The Watchpost

---

Deer mountain range.

The hundred broken mountains.

Snow and wind fell incessantly. The hundred years of accumulated snow layer had turned the ground into a glacier. This was like a place where dragon and snakes crouched, one not able to see the end of this landscape through a glance.

The snowflakes in the air covered everything and completely filled the sky. Even for a Spirit spring expert, their line of sight would not exceed thirty or forty metres. The snowflakes and ice crystals was swept apart by the strong wind, sharp like a blade. If it struck upon armour, it would emit a series of sparks.

Such an environment was so terrible and dire, that a normal person would have no chance of surviving.

Ye Qingyu's group had six people in it, currently sitting at a sentry post several hundred metres high and located behind the icy cliff. They were reorganising and resting.

Ye Qingyu had left Deer city the day before.

Because this was the army's itinerary and route, it involved matters that had to be kept secret. Therefore the path they took was different

from the normal road that armed escort companies usually travelled by.

On that day Ye Qingyu and his group left Deer city, they headed tens of kilometres north. In a concealed military sentry post, they activated the teleportation formation contained within and being transferred to another sentry post. They used another teleportation formation, and headed to another sentry post.....this continued on like so.

Ye Qingyu possessed a military position and therefore the route of his travel was even more secretive. All of the formation were located at places outsiders would definitely not be aware of.

Approximately a day later, Ye Qingyu had already travelled four or five thousand kilometres away from Deer city.

The further North they travelled, the colder and chiller the air became. The environment became harsher and harsher.

What the Snow country was confronting in the Northern borders was the Snow Ground Demon race. They were a race that was naturally born in the snow, and had already thoroughly adapted to the severe winter, holding an enormous threat. The location of Ye Qingyu and the others was in, was already not an entirely safe area. Occasionally they would be able to see the come and go of Snow ground demon beasts passing by. Snow ground demon beasts were the close relatives of Snow ground demon race. They did not have high intelligence but possessed great destructive power. Even the sentry posts of the country would occasionally receive the attacks of these snow ground demon beasts.

Therefore this place could not be said to be an area devoid of danger.

“We are currently attempting to communicate with sixty seventh watch post. We need a little bit of time, please wait a while sir.”

The head guard of the watch post were an elite that had encountered a hundred battles. He was a veteran that the Youyan pass had left behind. Seeming to be around thirty years of age, he possessed a well built physique and sideburns on his face. Very enthusiastically, he came over and greeted Ye Qingyu.

“This doesn’t matter. thank you very much.” Ye Qingyu quickly rushed to express his thanks.

The sentries including the head, did not number more than twenty people stationed here to defend. After observing in detail, Ye Qingyu discovered that the head of the guards was around the third Spirit spring of strength, but had suffered an hidden injury making his leg was somewhat handicapped. His strength was greatly reduced. The other people were all between the fifth stages of the Ordinary martial level to having half a step in the Spirit spring stage. They were a well trained and disciplined group albeit with their age was slightly leaning towards the higher side.

It was a group of veterans.

A group of people that was worthy of respect.

The sentry post was extremely small scale, and was hidden behind one of the ice cliffs. There were only five or six icy caves behind this cliff. It was hard to imagine just how boring and lonely it was to be stationed all

year in a place where it was completely covered with ice and snow, with only the accompaniment of Snow ground demon beasts. And for the old veterans stationed within this sentry post, this duty would keep them occupied for tens of years. There were times when the sentry post was completely broken through by the Snow ground demon beasts, and before any reinforcement could arrive, all contact would be lost. Their corpses were never ever able to be found again.

Accompanying Ye Qingyu heading towards Youyan pass were four elite military officers of the [Break through barracks] .

After bringing Ye Qingyu to his destination, they had to return and await further orders.

On the way here, Ye Qingyu had already familiarised himself with these four people, with talk and laughter between them.

The bonfire of the sentry post burned with a raging flame.

Outside there were the whistle of strong winds, and also the roars of the Snow ground demon beasts sounding at all times.

After a short while, the head of the guards rushed over with sweat covering his face. “I don’t know what’s happening, but the sixty seventh sentry posts has no way of being contacted. My superiors, perhaps you have to wait for another few hours.....”

Ye Qingyu brows furrowed. “Has there been such a thing that has occurred before?”

“It has happened a few times before. It’s not very common. Sometimes when the weather is particularly terrible, it will affect the normal fluctuation of the yuan qi in Heaven and Earth and there is no way to communicate using formations. But after a few attempts, it has always been fixed. We are in the midst of attempting to keep doing so. I am really sorry, please just wait patiently.....” The head of the guards explained with a red face.

“Since it is like this, then it does not matter if we wait a little. There is no need to hurry.” Ye Qingyu comforted him with a smile.

The head of the sentries answered with a sound, quickly rushing off again.

Ye Qingyu looked towards the darkening colour of sky. Without knowing why, he suddenly had a feeling, that this formation would not be fixed before tomorrow.

As expected, until the time of midnight, the formation was still in the state where contact could not be made.

Ye Qingyu and the other four could only rest, patiently waiting.

The conditions of the watch post was limited , so Ye Qingyu and the other four officers of the breakthrough barracks had been arranged to sleep in the same room.

Time passed on.

The four military officers slept on four separate ice beds, closing their eyes and recuperating. Blades were still in their embrace, evidently not asleep. The four appeared very vigilant, their position just so that they were defending against the doors and windows. The four protected and watched over Ye Qingyu, displaying a very high level of military training.

Ye Qingyu was in the middle of the ice bed, sleeping in his clothes.

In his mind, he thought back to the night before he left, to the wooden box that Li Shizen instructed Qingqing to hand to him.

Inside the wooden box, was a tangerine yellow piece of fur. Ye Qingyu did not know just what kind of creature it came from. It had strands of silky hair, exceedingly tough and durable and brought with it a faint yuan qi fluctuation. The fur emitted with a pale yellow light, and on it was some strange characters written on it. Ye Qingyu was stunned in his first glance, because these characters were from the God and Devil age.

After he carefully translated these letters, he discovered it was an ancient pill formula.

Ye Qingyu's foundation and knowledge in pills and medicine was not very great. But even he was able to discern that this should be a formula for creating a pill that condensed inner yuan and drew energy from Heaven and Earth. It was named the [Mysterious heaven pellet]. According to this formula, if you managed to successfully create this pill, then one [Mysterious Heaven pellet] was able to cause an increase in your inner yuan. It was comparable to one or two month of the normal training of a Spirit spring expert.

After Ye Qingyu read this, he was exceedingly shaken.

The value of this [Mysterious heaven pellet] was hard to imagine.

If this fur pill formula was circulated, it was enough for all the major factions of Deer mountain range to bleed over this. Between martial artists, it was enough to set off foul wind and bloody rain.

He did not just know how this pill formula had arrived in Li Shizen's hands.

It was a heavy present.

Ye Qingyu read it tens of times, etching the contents of the pill formula deep into his heart. Afterwards, he kept the pill formula beside his body at all times. As for the wooden box that held the pill formula, Ye Qingyu left it behind in the Ye residence.

Outside the ice doors, cold air whistled pass.

Ye Qingyu planned, after he had arrived within Youyan pass, to think of a plan to train in the concoction of pills. The best result would be that he would be able to produce the [Mysterious Heaven pellet] by himself. With such a method, his rate of training would be even faster.

The night darkened.

Ye Qingyu lay down on the ice bed, practicing according to the nameless breathing technique. Gradually he entered into a blank state of mind, as if he was in the depths of his sleep.

Very quickly, the sounds of the snores of the four military officers around him was able to be heard too.

It became chillier and chillier all around.

Without knowing just how long had passed.

Suddenly, a change occurred ---

The Ye Qingyu who had entered into a state of blankness, without any reason a spell of palpitation came over him, goosebumps rising. This type of sensation, was like a wild beast feeling the arrival of danger. In this instant, Ye Qingyu's instinctive reaction was quicker than his thoughts. Nearly subconsciously, he rolled over to the left.....

Ding!

A streak of cold sword descended on the ice bed that he was just lying on.

The bed of ice exploded into four or five pieces.

Ye Qingyu's inner yuan activated, his palm striking out with force. Using the force of the rebound, he sent himself flying six or seven metres

back, using the corner of the room to stabilise himself.

Opposite him.

The military officer who had launched a sneak attack had astonishment on his face.

The one who had ambushed him, was one of the four military officers that had guarded and led Ye Qingyu to Youyan pass.

He had not considered, that this blade he had calculated many times over, would miss. In the instant it was about to chop apart Ye Qingyu, it was evaded. A person that was in the depths of their sleep, could really have such a quick reaction.

“Why would you do this?” Ye Qingyu’s face began to become icy.

The military officer calmed down, and displayed a sinister smile upon hearing this. “Someone wants your life.”

After this, the long blade shook, yuan qi surging. The sword light was like a shooting star that struck to kill.

Ye Qingyu’s heart shivered.

This military officer was not weak. He was at least an expert of three Spirit springs.

Previously he had pretended he was only at the sixth stage of the ordinary martial level. Ye Qingyu's experience was lacking, so he could not discern this fact.

Ye Qingyu moved, not counter attacking at first. Inner yuan activating, he flashed to the other side of this icy cave and evading that malicious strike.

The military officer gave a low shout, his blades incessant and unending. Like autumn waters flowing back into the sky, it was packed with cold. Another blade hacked towards Ye Qingyu.

Ye Qingyu was about to strike back when something outside of his expectations happened yet again --

Xiu!Xiu!

It was two rays of sword light that was enough to seep into one marrows. Without any omen from, it exploded from the other two beds of ice. Quick as lightning, one left and one right, it attacked from behind Ye Qingyu. In an instant, the tips of the blade had already descended on Ye Qingyu, the clothes being sliced apart by the blades.....

It was yet another sneak attack.

The two military officers lying on the ice bed in the depths of sleep, were also assassins.

In an instant, an absolute killing situation was created.

Ye Qingyu faced three opponents.

It could be said this was a situation of absolute death.

“Die!” The first military officer who attacked first laughed maliciously, his blades surging.

Ye Qingyu’s lips suddenly fiercely curled in an arc.

Silver light began to abruptly converge in the ice room.

A sword like autumn waters appeared in Ye Qingyu’s hands.

Little Shang sword!

This spirit weapon that had already been submerged and nourished within Ye Qingyu’s dantian desert world for months appeared for the first time. The moment that Ye Qingyu grasped the sword, it was as if the Little Shang sword had gained intelligence. It emitted clear humming sounds, vibrating slightly, the crystal clear light radiating all around the entire ice room.

The autumn water sword was radiant like jade or bone !

The sword that was born to shed blood for a just cause!

The glow of the light exploded.

Chi!Chi!Chi!

The light sounds of three pairs of clothes being ripped and sliced apart was heard.

The three long blades advanced and stabbed towards Ye Qingyu. When the tip of the blades reached Ye Qingyu's body, they suddenly froze at that very moment. As if it was three poisonous snakes that had lost their lives, they could not advance an inch further.

Ye Qingyu was like a gust of wind, already two metres away.

The three military officers widened their eyes, their faces covered with shock and disbelief.

And in this instant, the Little Shang sword flickered. Like a sword hurricane, it passed by their bodies, reaping away their life. The speed of the sword was far too quick. Even though at this moment they could not see any wounds on their body, but the three military officers could clearly sense that their bodies had already been sliced deeply at the waist.

“Why.....is it.....like this.....” the leading military officer asked with great difficulty. “How did you know.....”

He did not understand why Ye Qingyu had such good fortune. He evaded his first strike then managed to dodge the confrontation of certain death.

After thinking it over, there was only one explanation—

That Ye Qingyu already knew long ago that he and the others wanted to assassinate him. He had long made precautions.

This was the only logical explanation

Today's assassination had been in the making for a very long time.

According to the most optimistic evaluation of Ye Qingyu's strength, he was only at the peak of the second Spirit spring stage. Any one of these three had the ability to kill Ye Qingyu one on one. Why was it that the three of them teaming up was instead slaughtered by Ye Qingyu?

Could it be that the previous reports and information gleaned, was wrong?

“Speak, who instructed you to kill me?” Ye Qingyu's long sword pointed at the ground, his aura ferocious. He advanced forward step by step.

## Chapter 116 – A Type Of Belief

---

“Ahah, hahaha we will wait for you beneath the grounds.” The military officer emitted a hideous laugh, his figure swaying and falling.

The other two also fell at the same time.

The smell of blood permeated the air.

“The dead duck has been cooked, but its beak is still stiff.....But this was still a pity. Their strength could be counted as high. The elite of the army, really became assassins.” Ye Qingyu shook his head in disappointment. He had shown no mercy, because there was not a need to show mercy.

The three people would definitely not spit out the identity of the people standing behind them directing their actions. The opposing party had planned and schemed for so long, that they had even stretched out their hands into the Breakthrough barracks. Their identities were definitely significant. The three people were warriors who did not fear death, chosen very carefully for this mission. Even if they suffered torture and interrogation, they would not utter a word.

But what he could determine, was that the status and power of the person behind the scenes was definitely not simple.

After a slight consideration, he could largely figure out the identity behind this. The number of people in Deer city able to interfere in the business of the country's breakthrough barracks could be counted in two

hands.

The person who wanted to kill himself became even clearer.

There was already an indistinct answer in Ye Qingyu's heart.

A clear and loud breathing coming from beside his ears.

Ye Qingyu turned his head to look.

The last military officer lay on the ice bed, his snore like thunder. This person's ability to sleep was really too great; such an event like heaven itself being overthrown had occurred in the ice room, and he as a martial artist did not sense anything. He was still in the midst of his sleep. Perhaps he would not even know how he died if Ye Qingyu had not stopped the assassins.

Ye Qingyu smiled, stowing away his sword and went to shake him awake.

The military officer squinted as he opened his eyes, staring at Ye Qingyu. Seeing Ye Qingyu's face, he was shocked. He quickly jumped up from the ice bed, rubbing his eyes and the back of his head: "Eh? What is it? Superior Ye.....is it dawn? Are we about to set off.....could it be that I have overslept?"

Ye Qingyu shook his head, pointing to the three corpses.

The military officer let out a shocked gasp, his sleepiness instantly gone. With a face of shock, he went over and observed for a while, saying: “Sword injuries.....an extremely fast sword.....what happened? There’s enemies attacking? But, superior you.....just what is going on?”

Ye Qingyu retold what just just happened briefly to him.

“What? The military officer jumped up: “This is impossible?”

Ye Qingyu had a smile that was not a smile. “Why is it impossible? Do you mean, that I am lying?”

The military officer rushed to say his apologies. “Your subordinate does not dare. But its just that this matter is too bizarre. These three people entered along with me to the Breakthrough barracks, it has been four years already. At the start we enlisted into the military together. I understand them extremely well. To dare to ambush superior you, this is a crime punishable by death, this.....could they have gone crazy?”

The dismayed complexion of the military officer was astonished, evidently finding it hard to receive such news. He did not look like he was lying.

Ye Qingyu nodded his head, not saying anything else.

This matter, was really bizarre.

“The truth behind this matter, we will slowly investigate.” Ye Qingyu gradually came in front of the window of the ice room, looking out at the

heavy snow outside in the boundless white. Saying in a considering tone: “Don’t worry, I won’t blame you. There will be such a day that the water recedes and the rocks are exposed<sup>1</sup>. I have a feeling, that our journey will not be too peaceful.”

Hearing this, the military officer was moved. Bowing his thanks: “Thank you sir, for your trust.”

Before he had finished.

Xiu!

Silver weapons, like a toxic snake coming from its den, shot out. In the instant that the military officer lowered his head, these weapons exploded from his nape without sounds or signs, striking towards Ye Qingyu.

The Ye Qingyu who had his back facing him absolutely did not notice such a minuscule movement.

The hidden weapon did not emit any sounds.

This was a sure kill.

But——

Ding!ding!Ding!

Rapid sounds of metal clashing resounded.

Accompanied by the clustered sparks, three silver needles enough to penetrate was sent flying. They landed against the walls of the ice room.

The Little Shang sword was held in Ye Qingyu's left hand. He had long turned around, grinning mockingly at the military officer.

Seeing that his sneak attack had not been successful, the military officer's reaction was very quick. Like a snake, he moved from his original position, flashing and widening their distance. After reaching ten metres away, he had an expression of surprise at Ye Qingyu: "You.....so you had long make preparations. But, just how did you discover I was also a killer?"

"Haha, a Spirit spring expert, can he enter into such a deep sleep? So deep that he could not even sense such strong yuan qi fluctuations right next to him?" Ye Qingyu held the Little Shang sword with one hand, the autumn water body of the blade glowing and illuminating the ice room. Like moving quicksilver, he pressed forward step by step. "And in such a situation, he would still pretend to be asleep? Are you too stupid or too retarded?"

A streak of embarrassed anger immediately coloured the face of the military officer. "Die!"

The joints of his body moved like a machine.

Xiu!Xiu!

Countless dim glimmers pierced through space and struck at him.

Everyone of them were hidden weapons.

The hidden weapons swept through the air like a rain shower in a stormy gale, completely covering him.

In such a cramped ice room, to avoid this storm of concealed weapons was really something too hard.

But Ye Qingyu had never thought of evading.

He let out a long peal of laughter, taking a step forward. The Little Shang sword in his hand transformed into a gale of swords, not retreating but advancing forward instead.

DingDingDingDing! !

There were constant sparks shining in the air.

The torrential rainstorm of concealed weaponry was swept into the storm of swords and was then crushed and destroyed into pieces. Not one single hidden weapon could penetrate within three metres around Ye Qingyu.

Ye Qingyu pressed forward, step by step.

The gaze of the military officer became fiercer and fiercer, struggling like a confined beast.

The unceasing piercing sounds continued. There were constantly all varieties of concealed weapons exploding from his hands, shoulders, waist, chest, knee and feet, all sorts of strange locations, making one unable to guard against it.

But no matter what the weapon, it could not pose as any sort of threat for Ye Qingyu.

Holding the Little Shang sword, Ye Qingyu was like a warrior holding an umbrella in the turbulent rain. No matter how fierce the rain was, the water could not get near his body.

Seeing that Ye Qingyu was already three metres close from him, the military officer realised that he had already lost the most ideal distance to launch his hidden weapons. His body shimmered, wanting to move away and continue to battle.....

Ye qingyu did not give him the chance.

““Storm of swords ! ”

The [Storm of swords], one of the four moves of the unmatched general was used. The power completely exploded.

Ye Qingyu's body transformed into a flow of light, one man and one sword moving at great speed. In a moments time, he had completely covered the distance between the figure of the military officer and himself.

The wind of blades passed by.

Then it stopped.

Ye Qingyu halted his intertwined footsteps.

The Little Shang sword in his hand, was not dyed with a hint of blood, still as clear as water.

Behind him.

The military officer had a sinister expression, his mouth opened wide. His figure was frozen, not able to throw his hidden weapons anymore. There was a strange whimpering emitting from his throat, and in these gurgles, five or six jets of blood spat out. His body fell over like toy building blocks, transforming into six or seven irregular pieces.

Ye Qingyu turned around.

He turned and saw the hacked up corpse by his foot, shocking even he himself.

After being speechless, Demon king Ye had an apologetic expression: “Aiya, I’m sorry, I’m really sorry. My apologies, today is the first time that I used the [Storm of swords] in real combat and I am not completely familiar with it. I did not think its power would be so great, that it would hack you apart into pieces. I will definitely take notice for next time, and leave you with a whole corpse. ”

The door of the ice room.

The head of the guards and the other sentinels had finally arrived. hearing of the commotion, they finally rushed over. Shock was in their expressions as they looked at Ye Qingyu.

Ye Qingyu gave them a smile, and attempted to explain himself. “It has nothing to do with me, they wanted to kill me first.”

“This.....” The leader and the soldiers still had hearts filled with caution and suspicion.

Ye Qingyu could only say: “When I was in deer city, I managed to offend some people, therefore they decided to act against me in secret. These four officers, are the assassins that these people have arranged..... How about it, if I say it like this, can you guys understand?”

The head and the sentries still had gazes holding caution as they looked towards Ye Qingyu.

Ye Qingyu stowed away the Little Shang sword back into the dantian world in the Spirit spring to nourish, and helplessly rubbed his jaw. To

add to his persuasive power, he took out the brass heroic medal, placing it into his palm and displaying it.

This was Ye Qingyu's attempt at adding to his trustworthiness.

He did not think, that in the instant they saw the military medal, all the suspicious contained in the eyes of the sentries completely vanished. It was replaced by an hard to describe admiration and worship. Their bodies even started quivering. The head of the sentries was especially moved, emotions in his eyes.

““Youyan pass [Return Point camp] sixteen year old veteran, head of the fifty fifth sentry post Yan Fan, pays respect to his superior!”

“We pay respect to our superior ! ”

“We pay respect to our superior ! ”

The head and the sentinels bent their bodies, doing the most standard imperial military salute.

Ye Qingyu was taken back.

He did not know whether it was a mistaken sensation, but in this instant he suddenly saw in the normal bodies of the old veterans, a radiance that even experts like Wang Jianru and the others did not possess. A feeling that was hard to describe using language completely enveloped Ye Qingyu in this moment. Ye Qingyu's impression of the old veterans greatly raised.

Ye Qingyu returned the military salute.

It was the his first military salute in his life.

His movements were somewhat stiff, but it was very correct.

Evidently, the medal that Ye Qingyu thought the greatest use was to threaten the nobles had caused the suspicions of the sentinels to completely extinguish. The military medal had a nearly holy power, a power that was akin to religion. The moment they saw this military badge, they chose to trust Ye Qingyu without any reservations.

To exaggerate even more, with this military medal in his hand, even if the real killer was Ye Qingyu, the others would still determinedly stand on Ye Qingyu's side.

Ye Qingyu felt that he had previously underestimated the power of this military medal.

“Sir, let us take care of the corpses.....” Yan Fan already began to consider matters from Ye Qingyu's perspective. “

Ye Qingyu nodded his head.

Yan Fan and the others began to clean the ice room.

This head of the soldiers personally inspected the four corpses of the

military officers in detail, doing a detailed record for future investigation. On the record, he signed his name personally demonstrating that he was willing to be a witness in the future, and asked for Ye Qingyu's further opinion.

“Can the formation start conveying now?” Ye Qingyu was still concerned about this matter.

The head shook his head, shame on his face.

“Try it again more, I'm not in that a hurry....” Ye Qingyu said: “You don't need to have that much pressure....”

Before he had finished.

Boom!

A terrifying energy, struck against the formation on the outer of this watch post. Nearly in a split second, it destroyed and annihilated the formation that was enough to receive the full power strike of someone at the twenty Spirit springs stage.

The icy rocks around the sentry post was completely broken apart.

Within the ice room, the earth began trembling and quaking.

“Just what is happening?” Ye Qingyu said blankly.

“Ambush!An enemy is attacking! Quickly send out the signal of attack!”  
The expression of the head and the sentries, instantly became serious.

-----

1. Truth comes to light ↵

## Chapter 117 – Snow Ground Dragon Ape

---

Boom!

It was another horrifying strike, descending from the heavens.

The earth shook and the mountain quivered.

Accompanied by the huge noise of something rupturing, the icy peak behind the watch post began to feel the pressure. Finally under such an onslaught, an enormous crack appeared. The icy layers constantly broke apart, and piece after piece of icy rocks weighing over thousands of pounds fell. Beside the peak, the several ice rooms were also smashed apart. Before the sentries in the rooms had the chance to escape, they were swallowed by the ice and snow.

“Quickly go, leave this place.”

Ye Qingyu’s complexion greatly changed, loudly screaming orders.

Fissure after huge fissure appeared on the wall of the ice room they were in. The top layer of ice curved incessantly above them, about to collapse.

“No…….” Yan Fan gave off an despairing and painful howl.

Because he saw with his own eyes, ice room after ice room collapsing.

Along with the destruction, he saw his comrades of these four or five years, being mercilessly swallowed by the ice. One person within having just ran to the entrance was crushed underneath a huge piece of ice descending from the skies. He instantly dyed the snow with blood, one hand extended outside from underneath the boulder.

The difference between life and death, was only one instant.

The previous instant, was life.

The next instant, was death.

“Hou ! ”

In the terrifying bellow of rage, a enormous snow ground demon beast, extended his large malevolent head from behind the collapsed icy peak.

This was the originator of this disaster. A monster that looked like a ape but was not an ape.

Amidst the collapsed ice rocks and white snow, this beast had a white face and large mouth, scarlet eyes, the pupil of its eyes just like a blood reservoir. One metre long fierce teeth was extended outside his mouth. Fifty metres tall, the body was exceedingly. Covered with long white fur, it had four arms. In its huge hands it was holding the snapped off ice peak, using it as a weapon, constantly striking it on the collapsed icy layer.

Snow ground demon beast.

And it was even a snow ground demon beast that had a relatively pure bloodline.

“It’s a [Snow ground heaven ape].....Heavens, why would such a demon beast appear here? This is impossible?”

A sentry screamed tragically, having already lost all hope.

The Snow ground dragon ape was a high class demonic beast. Legend has it that they were the descendants of the ancient silver dragon, possessing an endless power in its body. It was once used as the most optimal tool for carrying heavy weights by both the God and Devil race and had participated in many large scale battles during the God and Devil age. Although that era was far, far away, and the bloodline was completely different nowadays but it still possessed a certain intelligence. The power of gods was not something an normal Spirit spring expert could withstand.

The Snow ground dragon ape should be a demon beast that only appeared within the Youyan area. Why would it appear here all of a sudden?

Although the sentries of the military were resolute but they could not withstand the strike of such a demon beast.

A calamity had descended.

Boom!Boom!Boom! !

The [Snow ground dragon ape] swung the icy peak in its hands, treating it as if it was a massive staff. Holding it within its four arms, it constantly smashed it against the icy layer.

Under the terrifying force of this beast, an earthquake was undergoing everywhere. The icy rocks broke apart, and crack after crack fissured on the ground!

A piece of ice boulder tens of metres wide, fell from above their heads.

“Leave! First leave here then speak!”

Ye Qingyu roared loudly. From his inter dimensional pouch took out the Inexorable spear, striking out.

Boom!

The spear met with the enormous boulder. The inexorable spear bent with a curve that was enough to shock one's eyes.

“Scram off!”

Ye Qingyu loudly screamed, his arm exploding with force. With a boom, he rebounded away the descending ice boulder. The rock carrying with it over a hundred thousand pound of force in the impact, was directly sent flying by his spear.

The huge beast was not only creature possessing great physical strength. This was also Ye Qingyu's special battle method.

Yan Fan and the others recovered, wiping their tears. Biting their teeth, they rushed out from behind Ye Qingyu.

Hong!Long !

The room that was cut into the icy peak crumbled behind their heels.

If they were later by a second or two, they would have been completely covered under.

Ye Qingyu swung his spear, the spear dancing like a dragon in his hands.

Boom!Boom!Boom!

The momentum of the force emitted was like thunder, ice and rock shattering.

Yan Fan and the others, only felt a roiling thunder booming from beside their ears. Icy fragments scattered, The falling icy rocks from above them, was met with and sent soaring away.

After several breaths, the six people finally came to a outside area where there were not any icy rocks collapsing from above them anymore.

But at this time, the entire sentry post was collapsed. The watch post was constructed relying on the mountain, the back of it facing a naturally formed enormous icy peak. At this time, the [Snow ground dragon ape] had crushed apart the icy peak. Apart from Ye Qingyu and the other five people escaping fortunately from this disaster, the other tens of people had all perished.

Fan Yan and the others looked with amazement towards Ye Qingyu.

They had never thought that the inheritor of the military medal would be this powerful. He looked young, but his strength was so great and his aura so valiant. No wonder that he was able to become a military officer at such a young age.

“First I’ll slaughter that beast, to avenge our brothers!”

Ye Qingyu looked at the rubble of the sentry post and the dead soldiers buried under. His rage could not help but soar into the heavens. Amidst the shocked exhalations of Yan Fan and the others, he flew through the sky, his spear piercing out like lightning.

The fierce dragon pierced the golden armoured king.

The [Snow ground dragon ape] roared with rage and the icy peak in his hand struck out like a long cudgel.

Boom!

The ice peak shattered.

The enormous figure of the [Snow ground demon beast] was forced to retreat a step backwards by this impact.

Ye Qingyu let off a low grunt, his body being sent flying backwards and striking on a icy boulder far off. The ice cracked apart, and his figure was buried by the collapsing ice and snow.

“Superior.....” Fan Yan and the others screamed in panic.

Xiu!

The long spear exploded from the ice

The Ye Qingyu who was holding the spear with one arm, followed behind the spear and soared into the skies yet again.

“I am fine. You guys first go find a place to hide.” Ye Qingyu’s voice reverberated throughout the dark and icy night. “Beast, today I will definitely slaughter you!”

Xiu!

**【Banner of Heaven and Earth】 !**

A part of the Inexorable spear descended from the heavens, quick as lightning. Bringing with it a force that was like thunder and faster than the speed of sound, the spear was nailed onto the shoulder of the [Snow

ground dragon ape].

“AoAoAo...”

The [Snow ground dragon ape] let out a painful roar, pale silver blood spurting out from his injury. It's vicious nature was completely provoked. The other three arms grabbed towards Ye Qingyu.

“Beast, I'll ram you to death....Fierce dragon pierce!”

Ye Qingyu's crazy nature was similarly invoked. He did not evade or dodge, the other half of the Inexorable spear stabbing out. Once again, he performed the [Fierce dragon pierce] of the four moves of the golden armoured king. Under the explosion of this technique, it headed madly like a mountain landside towards the [Snow ground dragon ape].

Boom!

One man and one ape violently struck against each other.

Fan Yan and the others hid behind a comparatively safe ice boulder, completely dumbfounded.

They had experienced countless fierce battles in the life before, but they had never seen that the human race would use such a crude and brutal battle method to fight directly against the [Snow ground dragon ape] possessing divine strength. It was a hard object striking against a hard object. The Ye Qingyu that was burning with a will to do battle was even more like a vicious beast than the [Snow ground dragon ape].

Boom!

A large and small humanoid shape exploded apart.

Ye Qingyu was once again struck against the icy ground resulting in the creation of a human shaped crevice.

[The Snow ground dragon ape] body that was huge like a hill was also forced back, stumbling tens of steps. Its blood was like a fountain that shot out from the three or four injuries in it's chest. His entire chest was sunken in, with a human shaped indent. Who knew how many parts the bones inside had broken into.....

“AoAoAo.....Hou!Hou!”

The beast completely went mad.

He possessed some rough intelligence, and was able to sense the terror of the person in front of him. But to be provoked by such a tiny life form made him unable to contain his rage and anger. He struggled to scramble up, bellowing and charging towards the place that Ye Qingyu had just fallen. ....

Boom!Boom!Boom!Boom!

The ground started quaking.

“Protect our superior!”

Fan Yan and the other held their weapons, preparing to rush out.

“Step backwards, let me handle this beast.””

A noise sounded. Once again, Ye Qingyu’s spear was like a dragon, breaking apart the ice and soaring out.

**【Protection of Heaven and Earth】 !**

Inner yuan activated and yuan qi spurted out from Ye Qingyu’s body. It was as if golden dragons was entwined around his body. From far away, it seemed that his entire figure was enshrouded by a golden light, inner yuan forming a protective field five metres from around him that greatly increased Ye Qingyu’s defensive abilities.

Boom!Boom!Boom!

A man and a ape once again rammed against each other.

This was once again an absolutely berserk and mad battle.

In front of the enormous [Snow ground dragon ape], Ye Qingyu was like an ant facing an elephant. But the force he emitted, was absolutely not tiny. It was completely enough to fight against the huge beast in front of him. The man and the beast was sharply opposed to each other, with neither party wiling to give an inch. It was a meeting between the

copper pan and the iron brush. The surrounding ice layer broke into who knows how many parts, crack after crack appearing on the ground.....

Fan Yan and the others witnessed this scene with their mouths open and eyes wide.

“This superior.....is somewhat brutal.” A sentry mumbled.

“Not only brutal, he is ferocious.” Another sentry said with his mouth open. “Too violent, this is really too violent.”

Fan Yan could not hold back a smile, stowing away the shock in his heart. Giving them a glare, “If you still have the mind to chat, then quickly make the preparations to depart. Given that the [Snow ground dragon ape] has appeared in such an area, I fear that this matter will not be simple.....”

Before he had finished.

“AoAo.....” The [Snow ground dragon ape] gave off a tragic howl.

Peng!

A bloody and huge arm, was directly torn from it's giant like body.

The wrist of the torn apart arm was held in Ye Qingyu's embrace.

“Aaaaaaa, Die, die die”

Ye Qingyu was completely in some sort of berserk state. The arm he had torn apart, he treated it as if it was a weapon. Striking using his makeshift cudgel, he fiercely struck the body of the [Snow ground dragon ape].

The dragon ape also went berserk.

Peng!

Ye Qingyu was slapped away, landing on a icy rock far off.

The clothes on his body was shattered into scraps, piece after piece flying away like butterflies. His muscular body was exposed. The berserk Ye Qingyu's muscles were heavily contracted. As if carved with blade and axe, his figure possessed a violent beauty.

And the silly dog Big Head that was originally sleeping in Ye Qingyu's chest, jumped out shivering.

The him that had just awoken, still was not entirely clear on just what the situation was. With confusion in his heart, he surveyed the surroundings, not knowing what had happened.

But in the next instant, his nose suddenly smelled something. Nose sniffing, his gaze converged very quickly on the enormous arm of the dragon ape in Ye Qingyu's embrace. The fresh and faintly moving meat along with the fragrance of the meat and silver blood, made the silly

dog's gaze begin to glint with a light.

In that instant, he was not confused anymore.

The little fellow let out an excited yelp, not able to restrain his saliva. He panted and charged over.....

## Chapter 118 – Just What Is This

---

The other side.

Ye Qingyu did not take notice of this scene.

“Come, beast, come again.....”

Ye Qingyu was in a berserk state. Throwing away the enormous arm in his hand, he rushed forward yet again.

Big Head let out an excited bark. Like a streak of lightning, he charged forward. Leaping on the arm of the massive ape that had been torn apart, he gorged himself happily.

Peng!

Very quickly, Ye Qingyu managed to tear another arm of the [Snow ground dragon ape].

“Huchi Huchi, Wuwuwuwu!”

Big Head once again panted excitedly and bounded over.

The massive arm of the ape that he was devouring was already finished. What was left was only fresh white bones, with not even a shred of flesh remaining. Furthermore, in each of the bones, there were two

little holes used to crack the bone open. The bone marrow had been entirely sucked out.

“What is that thing?” The sentries were dumbfounded.

“Are my eyes mistaking me....” The sentries rubbed their eyes, and then saw a white ball of light circling the second arm of the huge ape at high speed. Nearly in an instant, the arm was similarly sucked dried and transformed into pearly white bones.

“It seems like some sort of thing from the superior’s body?” The sentries did their utmost to recall where this creature had originated from.

“Could it be a pet that the superior is raising?” The sentinels asked with a considering tone.

“What nonsense are you saying.” The head of the sentries Yan Fan gave them a glare. “Be careful and cautious, protect the superior.....”

Saying this, Yan Fan abruptly realised that there was no way they could interfere in a battle of this scale. They could not be said to be protecting Ye Qingyu at all. Yan Fan unconsciously blushed with shame. But his gaze was suddenly drawn to an object next to the white bones. There was some sort of thing shining with a golden light: “Just what is that, go and see.....”

The group avoided the ripples emanating from the battle, skirting around the snow waves and icy rocks from far away. They went over and had a look.

It was a golden wrist protection for the beast.

The gaze of Yan Fan and the others became serious, lifting the golden wrist protection up for inspection. It was around a hundred pounds of weight. The diameter of the wristband could entirely encircle the three or four them together. Stupidly heavy, there was some sort of special pattern engraved on the surface that had an unknown meaning. This pattern was intricate, and was absolutely not something that the demon beast could create naturally by itself. Very evidently, this gold wrist protection band was originally worn on the body of the [Snow ground dragon ape], but the fur of the Snow Ground dragon ape was too long and had covered it. Only when the arm was completely devoured, was it exposed.

“This dragon ape seems to be raised by someone.....” Yan Fan’s mind suddenly realised this problem at this time.

“Huchi, Huchi Huchi Huchi!”

A strange noise was heard.

The several people turned around and looked, seeing a little white dog the size of their palm behind them. He had fallen back from the arm and was currently crouched in front of them. He was sticking out his little pink tongue, the little white milk teeth in his mouth glinting with little sparkles. With a curious expression, he was evaluating Yan Fan and the others.

“A very cute little fellow.” The compassion of the sentinels was instantly invoked.

“Don’t move.” Yan Fan shouted clearly. “It should have been him.” He pointed towards the devoured arm of the huge ape where only white bones remained.

“it shouldn’t be, how could such a little fellow .....” The sentries still had suspicions.

Before they finished.

They saw the jaw of the silly dog Big Head shake, as if something was being forced out, then a terrifying thing happened ———

The originally adorable jaw suddenly became larger, larger and larger. In the blink of an eye it was four or five metres tall, and the little pink tongue had become a barbed and bloody tongue. The cute little milk teeth became like rows of steel swords, and then from inside this terrifying jaw, something came. A completely clean and enormous white bone was vomited out from the throat.

It was a main bone from the arm of the [Snow ground dragon ape].

After the silly dog Big Head had vomited this humongous bone, the jaw returned to its original appearance. Dainty and cute, the little pink tongue licked the lips and jaws.

Seeing this scene, cold sweat poured from the sentinels.

No one felt the little fellow was adorable anymore.

“Huchi Huchi....” Big Head lifted his head to look up at the people, a strange sound emitting from within. He evaluated the five people with curiosity, a trace of saliva dripping from the corner of its mouth”

“Would it eat even us.....” One of the sentinels whispered.

“Is this the pet that superior Ye raised or not.” The sentries was somewhat nervous, seeing the saliva of the little fellow. They felt that in the eyes of this little dog, they held no difference from a delicious arm of the dragon ape.

“Huchi Huchi!”

Big Head hopped left and right.

The speed was extremely rapid. When it jumped, it was like a bolt of lightning whistling through the air. As if by teleportation, he constantly changed his position. The eyes of Yan fan and the others could not keep up with that sort of speed. Only by following it for several breaths of time, the sentinels felt as if their eyes did not belong to themselves any longer, their eyes spinning.

“Wuwuwu!”

From the mouth of Big Head, saliva flowed out. He stared at the five people, constantly nearing.

Xiu!

He suddenly jumped up, charging towards Yan Fan.

The originally small jaw, already showed signs of turning large.

Shit !

He wants to eat me?

The head of the sentries, Yan Fan was shocked.

At this time——

Pak!

Ye Qingyu suddenly appeared in front of Yan Fan and the others and slapped the silly dog that had nearly turned into a streak of lightning flying away.

“Wuwuwu, Huchi Huchi!” The silly dog very quickly rushed back over, squatting in front of Ye Qingyu. He had an appearance that he had been extremely wronged. Black and large watery eyes gazed towards Ye Qingyu, indicating that he did not understand why he was struck.

Ye Qingyu wiped away the frost on his face, and could not laugh or cry

seeing this. Pretending to be greatly angered, “You idiot that only knows how to eat. I have always endured the fact that you can eat so much. Who would have thought that you dared to eat people now. Is it that after a while of time, you will even eat me?” ”

“Huchi.....Huchi!”

Big Head quickly rushed to put on an expression. He indicated that he thought Yan Fan and the others were the enemies and this was all just a misunderstanding. Then he came over in a flattering fashion, jumping and rubbing his head against Ye Qingyu’s leg, sticking out its tongue in flattery. He indicated that he would absolutely not eat Ye Qingyu, that he was a very obedient dog.

The little fellow was only a dog, but the expression on his face was extremely rich and agile.

Without knowing why, Ye Qingyu was able to understand what he meant with just one look.

“You can eat so much, can you help and eat that large monkey?” Ye Qingyu panted roughly, pointing at the [Snow ground dragon ape] that was also breathing in a similar state.

During the course of battle, the situation of the [Snow Ground dragon ape] had already become incomparably grievous.

Of the four arms, three of them had already been torn and ripped apart by Ye Qingyu. The white bones of the chest was exposed, and its eyes had

nearly been struck blind, nearly not even able to stand stably. It supported itself against a humongous icy rock. Silver blood constantly dripped from the wounds, flowing down to the ground and instantly freezing into ice.....

The beast was very vicious. After receiving such injuries it was still incomparably ferocious.

“Hou Hou Hou ! ”

Supporting itself against the icy boulder, it let out a roar. It's ferocious killing aura shot into the heavens. Transforming into a bloody gale, it charged towards Ye Qingyu and the others.

Fan Yan and the others could not help but cover their ears, their heart palpitating. They were so shaken that they were near dumb.

Ye Qingyu's brow also knitted.

And the stupid dog who only knew how to eat, because he had committed a wrong, was currently flattering and attempting to curry favour. He was fawning over Ye Qingyu. The bellow of the ape shook him till his fur stood up. In a flash, like a mad lion that had its mate snatched away during mating, he suddenly became furious. Lifting his heads, in a split second his jaw expanded, transforming into a ferocious bloody mouth that roared back at the [Snow ground dragon ape]!

“Huchi Huchi .....Wu Wu!””

A weak and sissy like voice sounded.

Compared to the sound waves of the [Snow ground dragon ape] that could create wave after wave of aftershock, the voice of the silly dog was completely like a fly buzzing.

Ye Qingyu could not help but cover his face.

This was just too shameful.

From now on, he decided he would not let this adorable and stupid dog to make a disgrace of himself anymore. At this moment, Ye Qingyu really wanted to throw away this thing that only knew how to eat. This was really too useless, apart from eating, he possessed no other ability whatsoever.

Yan Fan and the others, could not restrain a smile.

This little dog was too dimwitted , too cute.

“Woof Woof.....Huchi, Wuwu!” Big Head did his best, continuing to roar.

At this time, Ye Qingyu could not force himself to watch any longer. He grabbed Big Head’s neck and lifted him up. He was about to say something, but suddenly felt that something was not right. Turning his head to look, he discovered that the heavily injured [Snow ground dragon ape] twenty metres away had long stopped roaring. It was hiding behind an icy rock. As if it was a little child that was badly scared, it was

quivering, whimpering noises coming from its mouth.

Just what was this?

Ye Qingyu turned his head to look back at Fan Yan and the others.

The five people was still in a fossilised and frozen state.

Ye Qingyu again looked around at his surroundings. There was nearly nothing else that had appeared.

Could it be?

Ye Qingyu lowered his head to look at the thing he was carrying in his hand. The silly dog Big head had a face of flattery, panting with his tongue and trying to curry favour with Ye Qingyu. A ridiculous notion could not help but be born in his heart. Could it be that the roar of this little thing, had really scared the [Snow ground dragon ape]?

This can't be true.

Could it be that this glutton was the natural enemy of the [Snow ground dragon ape]?

Ye Qingyu thought for a while, then decided to do a brave experiment.

He lowered his head and gave a grin to the silly dog Big Head. Then he

directly threw the glutton, sending him sailing in the direction of the [Snow ground dragon ape].

“En, even if the glutton is not the natural enemy of the [Snow ground dragon ape], from the speed he just displayed, he can escape. At the most, he will be wounded, how could he die so easily.....” Demon King Ye persuaded himself in such a fashion.

But the scene after, also made Ye Qingyu enter into a fossilised state.

The stupid dog Big Head, after being thrown on the body of the [Snow Ground dragon ape], did not display any expression of fear whatsoever. On the contrary, the [Snow ground dragon ape] did not dare to move at all. It was quaking, a low pleading noise coming from its mouth.....

But it had not use whatsoever.

Big head transformed into a streak of light, rapidly rotating around the [Snow ground dragon ape].

After approximately ten breaths of time. The [Snow ground dragon ape] had disappeared and was replaced by a complete skeleton. The white bones did not even have a shred of flesh remaining on it. From far away, it seemed like a large scale corpse that had undergone thousand years of wind and this was the fossilised skeleton.

The stupid dog Big Head stood on the skeleton, licking its jaw in satisfaction.

“Fuck.....”

Ye Qingyu felt slightly powerless in his language.

Just what was this.

The little thing really caused a living dragon ape to turn into a skeleton just like nibbling at it like corn?

First, lets not discuss why it would have such an ability. If your father I, knew about this long ago, then I would have long barred the doors and just released the dog. There was no need to fight for half the day, tiring himself out till he was red in the face.

Ye Qingyu beckoned to the silly dog Big Head.

Xiu!

The little fellow appeared in a flash in front of Ye Qingyu, panting under his feet. He stuck out his tongue and pretended to be adorable.

## Chapter 119 – The Chessboard In The Air

---

Your uncle, don't try to act cute !

Demon King Ye silently cursed at the little dog his heart, placing the glutton into another entirely different level. To devour a live [Snow ground dragon ape] tens of metres tall, could this be believed? If not for seeing it with his own eyes today, even if Ye Qingyu would not believe it even if he was beaten to death.

But after experiencing the power of this glutton, Ye Qingyu suddenly felt that he should be a bit gentler towards him.

What if this glutton's craziness was abruptly invoked and he felt famished? If Big Head wanted to eat him, what could he do?

At this time, Ye Qingyu realised, that even eating was a technique.

After encountering a great enemy, he could just close the doors and release the dog. Then the opposition could just be eaten, hahaha!

“Haha, not bad, Big head. This matter was done beautifully.....” Ye Qingyu's tongue flapped, originally wanting to give more compliments. But after realising that Fan Yan and the others were still present and he, as the master, should not flatter his dog too much. So he stopped, rubbing the head of Big Head instead.

“Huchi Huchi.....Wu Wu!”

Having received praise, Big Head was very excited. Using his head to rub against Ye Qingyu's palm, he acted coquettishly.

Thankfully!

Apart from being able to eat, Big Head's was evidently not that smart. He did not mind in the slightest about the brutal treatment he had just received. If Ye Qingyu just treated him a little better in the future, perhaps the trash technique of eating would become useful.

Fan Yan and the others, after this huge shock, finally managed to get their brain juices flowing again. Their thoughts and consciousness slowly recovered.

So this terrifying and bizarre dog was really a pet superior Ye kept.

This really was what kind of person kept what kind of bird.

Only such a strange and violent youth like superior Ye, could raise such an outwardly adorable but inwardly terrifying beast as a pet.

“You are not allowed to eat people in the future, do you remember?” Demon King Ye was busy instructing Big Head.

He had also been frightened by the scene of the the silly dog Big Head rushing towards Fan Yan and the others. This was not a good omen. Ye Qingyu was really afraid that this glutton would run out and eat people

in the future. With the amount he could consume, he could definitely devour hundreds if not thousands of people. This was a matter not impossible for Big Head. At that time, the trouble that would result from this would definitely be great.

“Huchi Huchi!”

The stupid dog Big Head consecutively nodded his head. He jumped on Ye Qingyu’s shoulder, indicating that he understood.

“Superior, this [Snow ground dragon ape] is most likely raised by someone.....” Yan Fan interjected. “I feel that this matter is not simple. It is very possible that this dragon ape was brought here by someone.” The head of the guards possessed wealthy experience. He told Ye Qingyu about what he had discovered and handed over the golden wrist protection.

After examining it for a while, Ye Qingyu agreed with Yan Fan’s conjecture.

Until the present, the beasts that the human race were able to tame only consisted of Spirit beasts and Demon beasts.

Spirit beasts were lifeforms that inherited the spiritual influence of Heaven and Earth. Born with intelligence, they could communicate and interact with humans. There were some Spirit beasts that grew up along with humans from a young age, causing feelings being born between them. After they had grown up, the Spirit beast would be able to become their battle companion. And as for demon beasts, they were a branch from the demon race. Brutal and vicious with an innate savageness, they

possessed a rough intelligence. They had a hard time differentiating between enemy and friend, and there were specialists who tamed these beasts specifically. If they were trained from young, after they grew up, it was very possible they could become a great aid during battle.

The [Snow ground dragon ape] was a fairly high class demon beast amongst the vicious beasts. If there was someone that had trained it from its young, then it was very possible that it was controlled by that person.

From this golden wrist protection, this [Snow ground dragon ape] did not come from the wild. It should be a battle companion that had been raised by humans.

And this would also explain, why there would be such a strong ferocious beast appearing in the hundred broken mountain range.

But once this theory was established, this represented a far more serious problem.

Since the [Snow ground dragon ape] was a battle pet raised by someone, then this meant the attack on the watch post was definitely not a coincidence. Very possibly, this was a scheme planned by some faction or expert. The death of the dragon ape did not signify the end of this matter. More horrifying incidents, was about to occur.

Ye Qingyu realised, that along with the previous assassination incident, the force behind the [Snow ground dragon ape] could have been targeting him.

“I’m sorry, I’ve dragged you into this.” Ye Qingyu apologised to Yan Fan and the others.

The watch post was destroyed, tens of sentries died tragically.

I did not kill Bai Run, but Bai Run died because of me<sup>1</sup>.

Ye Qingyu’s heart was immediately enveloped in ire and guilt.

He would definitely find the person behind this, to settle this blood debt.

“Superior, there is no need to say such things. “Fan Yan said emotionally. “No matter who it is or what the force that wants to target you, we will definitely not retreat. We are just a group of old veterans that possesses nothing and have nothing to rely on. Although we may not have been able to sacrifice our lives on the battlefield, but when we retreated from the front lines, we were able to fight alongside you. This is our honour. Although tens of brothers have died, they have realised the oath that we made the moment we joined. The died with no complaints. For us, to fight with a holder of the military medal is our greatest honour. We will die with no complaints.”

“Die with no complaints.”

“That’s right, superior.”

On the faces of the other sentries, there was a faint red from being emotionally moved. A glimmer of light was in their eyes.

Ye Qingyu did not know what he should say.

Even though his identity right now was a military officer, but he had not truly provided any assistance as of yet to army. At this moment, he was incapable of comprehending the conviction of life and death the soldiers had and the interdependence between soldiers. He was incapable of understanding the heroism of advancing wave upon wave, stepping into the breach to replace fallen comrades all for their honour. He was incapable of viewing death as a return home. But the words of these veterans had greatly shaken Ye Qingyu.

Ye Qingyu was able to sense a great power on the bodies of Fan Yan and the others. This was not the martial power of yuan qi. This power may not be able to explode with killing force in a split second. But, this force, was what had truly allowed the human race to exist in this cold and merciless world. It was the pillar of their spirit.

“Good, we will bury the brothers that have fallen, then quickly leave from here.” “Ye Qingyu did not tarry any longer.

“There is no need.” On the face of Fan Yan and others, there was a tragic determination written on their faces. “As a soldier, to be buried between Heaven and Earth is long something we have prepared for. Our brothers, to be shrouded in ice and snow, to be able to sleep in the embrace of the pure white snow is already fortunate. Compared to our comrades who died in the mouths of the demon race, they are luckier many times over.....we should just leave here as quickly as possible.”

To prepare against the next hidden attack, they must quickly depart

from this destroyed watch post.

But just where could they go right now?

“I know that there is an underground cave twenty miles from here. The location is hidden, it should be comparatively safe.....” One of the sentries said, his eyes brightening.

Ye Qingyu nodded his head in agreement. “Fine, lets first go there to hide for a while.”

Before he had finished.

Pok !

A spurt of blood came from Ye Qingyu’s mouth. His facial colour became candle yellow like thin gold. 。

“Superior.....”

“Superior, are you okay?”

The sentries were deeply shocked.

Ye Qingyu rubbed off the traces of blood at the corner of his lips, shaking his head. “I’m fine, its only just that I suffered some injuries during the battle with that beast.....No matter, lets leave here first.”

“Superior, let me carry you.” Fan Yan said.

“There is no need to make such a fuss. Quickly go, I can walk by myself.” Ye Qingyu laughed.

The other sentries, had already uncovered some of the bowls, ladles and so on from the ice and snow cover along with several torches. After tidying the essential goods, under the lead that armoured sentry, they left at high speed.

The vast wind and snow, completely covered a person’s track.

The night was long and slow.

As if it had no end.

.....

At the same time.

In a icy peak hundreds of miles from here

Two figures were sat on a flat icy boulder on the peak, sipping tea and playing chess.

The smooth icy rock about an acre of land in size had evidently been

created using a supernatural sword technique to chop the ice peak in half. It was creating by force. On the edges of the icy rock , there were numerous strange symbols and formations that were etched using a sword. They fluctuated with a pale silver light, the formation absorbing the yuan qi of heaven and earth. The use of this was to create a pale layer of light, covering the entire platform.

Within the light layer, there was no wind nor snow.

A clay teapot larger than the palm, floated in mid air. Beneath it, was a violent flame. Steam rose from it and the fragrance of tea wafted in the air.

It was unknown what kind of tea was cooking in the tea pot but just a smell was enough to make one carefree and relaxed.

Two people were sitting and drinking tea. One had greyish white hair, and one was completely covered in a black robe.

As the fingers of the two people pointed at the air, yuan qi pieces would appear. With a flick of their wrists, a chessboard manifested in the air.

“An hour has already passed, why has [Killing star] not yet returned?” The grizzly haired man placed a white piece.

“Your heart is disturbed.” Under the cowl of the black robe, a low chuckle emitted. A black piece created from black yuan qi was placed on the board. “I’ve won. Since Ye Qingyu has a treasure on him, he naturally has cards hidden under his sleeve. You made a beast to do your matters

for you, this is far too great a responsibility for him. Most likely, your beast has already been killed.”

“Shut your mouth.” The grizzly man was angered, and waved his hand. The chessboard in the air dispersed, the white and black pieces turning into mist and disappearing. He rose quickly, saying: “The strength of the flesh body of [Killing Star] can be compared to a normal ten Spirit springs expert. To act against Ye Qingyu and tens of veterans, just what problem could it encounter.....”

Before he had finished.

Kacha.

A light voice was heard.

On the wrist of the grizzly hair man, a jade bracelet shattered, falling to the ground.

The colour of his face abruptly changed.

Since the jade bracelet was shattered, this represented that [Killing Star] was dead for sure.

This jade bracelet belonged to the Snow ground dragon ape called [Killing Star]. It was its soul bracelet.

The black robed figure began laughing loudly. “Liu Yuancheng, you

feared Ye Qingyu's military identity and became overcautious, not daring to act with your own hands. To send a beast to your job, could this be counted as trying to steal a chicken but losing the rice used to lure it? I've long said, to do great matters, one must also have great courage. You, are still not enough.....”

“Shut your mouth.”

The grizzly haired man roared in rage.

He was namely the registrar of the registrar office in Deer city, Liu Yuancheng.

“[Killing star] is the battle companion I raised since I was small, it was like my son. Ye Qingyu, it must be you. You killed my Liu Lei, you killed my adopted son Sun Yufu, and now you've killed yet another one of my sons.....I swear, I will definitely turn your bones into ashes.” Liu Yuancheng, with ash coloured hair that stood up like a mad lion rose, angered to the extreme.

“Hoho, just speaking a few words, who doesn't know how to do that.” The black robed man sat where he was, with cold mocking laughter and phrases.

Liu Yuancheng let out a bellow of rage, turning into a streak of light, charging into the vast night.

Peng!

The light barrier of the ice peak was destroyed by the impact.

The wind and snow whistled entirely through the sky. The winds like electricity, the pieces of snow like blades.

But it could not invade at all into the metres of space around from the black robed man.

The black robed man slowly stood up. With a beckon, the clay teapot was in his hands, the violet flame disappearing.

He drank a sip of tea in the pot, and emitted a bizarre laugh: “You avenge the murder of your son, I’ll take my treasure.....You best not have any other intentions, otherwise, hehe.....if not for relying on you to confirm the location of that little brat, why would I team up with a retard like you.”

-----

1. A famous saying in Chinese history regarding the story that someone indirectly caused Bai Run to die through their actions. ↵

## Chapter 120 – Treating The Injuries

---

The ice cave that the armoured sentry had mentioned, was something that he unintentionally discovered during hunting.

The life of a sentry was dry and tedious. Some sentries, during the times where the weather was not particularly bad, would choose to go out and hunt to relieve their boredom. This could also aid in the accumulation of food stores. The sentry, during one of his hunts, fell into an icy crevice by accident. He thought that that he was dead for sure. But what he discovered instead tens of metres below the icy layer, was a naturally created ice cave. It was like a labyrinth one could use to shelter from the ferocious wind and snow.

He brought Ye Qingyu and the others near this area, spending over an hour of time before finally location the ice cave.

After descending tens of metres below the ice crevice, the noise of the outside explosive wind became much less. It made the entire world seem to be much quieter.

The icy cave was like an underground palace made of ice and snow. The space below was exceedingly large. Corridors after corridors of ice passageways led to different areas, with different honeycomb like ice rooms of all sorts and sizes scattered around. The air was exceedingly fresh and clear, suitable for living in.

Fan Yan and the others found some ice rooms that were comparatively hidden, lighting a fire.

The dim yellow light shined in all directions, passing through the reflection of the ice walls. The glow caused the entire ice cave to become beautiful.

After the reflection of the lighting, brilliant rays of multicoloured lights were from. It was as if this was a palace from legends.

On the way here, Ye Qingyu had spat out a high quantity of blood. After entering and settling down, he sat in a meditative position, circulating his qi to treat his injury.

The injury was far more serious than what he had initially imagined.

The battle power of the [Snow ground dragon ape], purely came from the toughness of his physical body. After exchanging several blows with it, Ye Qingyu discovered this aspect. So he chose to fight fire with fire. He wanted to determine, just what kind of level the power of his physical body had reached and whether it was possible to fight against this gigantic beast.

Because, after the exploration of the dragon's den in the [Boundary canyon battlefield], he discovered that the physical power of his body had explosively grown. It had risen to such a level, than even he himself was not clear just how strong his physical body was.

After the [Boundary canyon battlefield], Ye Qingyu had not encountered any sort of strong opponents. Therefore, there was not a need to explode with his full strength to do battle.

Meeting the [Snow ground dragon ape] today, could be counted as finding an enemy to practice on.

But the power of the [Snow ground dragon ape] far exceeded Ye Qingyu's current level. But after Ye Qingyu went berserk, he felt there was a strange energy fluctuating in his bones and limbs. As if this energy was endless and would never dry up, it surprisingly suppressed the [Snow ground dragon ape]. He even managed to tear apart three arms from the dragon ape.

This was absolutely a performance that exceeded Ye Qingyu's normal level.

Of course, Ye Qingyu also paid a heavy price.

Only he himself knew, just how many heavy strikes of the [Snow ground dragon ape] had he suffered.

From his outer appearance, there were no signs of any injuries. This was due to the fact that after undergoing that experience in the dragon's den, the skin and flesh of Ye Qingyu's toughness had risen exponentially. Blades and swords would find it difficult to hurt him. Even though the fingernails of the [Snow ground dragon ape] were sharp, but they could not break apart Ye Qingyu's skin and flesh.

The injuries he sustained, were all internal.

Ye Qingyu felt like his body had been hammered heavily countless times by

a steel mallet, as if his body had been crushed apart. Between his skeleton and muscles, there were many fragments of hidden injuries. But from the outside, everything seemed fine and intact. This type of pain was hard to describe.

Using qi to activate his inner vision.

“My inner organs really has been displaced due to the force of the strikes.....” Ye Qingyu could not help but feel frightened after the events. “Thankfully, with both the nameless heart sutra and inner yuan to treat my injuries, I should be fully healed within five days.....Mother, it seems like I can’t go that hard in the future.”

His inner yuan activated.

Within the dantian world, in the three Spirit springs, yuan qi springs spouted water pillars hundreds of metres high.

The water rushed out from his dantian world, transforming into inner yuan that entered Ye Qingyu’s bones and limbs. It nourished and healed the injuries he had sustained.

Ye Qingyu sat cross legged, ripples after ripple of yuan qi fluctuating surrounding his entire body.

Yan Fan and the others protected Ye Qingyu in the stone room. They also hurriedly utilised this time to recover.

The watch post was destroyed, and the formations for teleportation and

communication had also been broken apart. For this period of time, they were in a state where they lost contact completely. A certain of time was needed before the military would notice the disappearance of the watch post and send experts to investigate. At least in half a month, they had no method of receiving any help whatsoever.

Yan Fan and his subordinates were currently discussing something.

They had experienced hundreds of battles, and had undergone countless dangerous situations. In such a circumstance, they still remained very calm. They were discussing what further protective measures they should take during this period of time. On the body of Yan Fan, was a map belonging to the military that showed the distribution of the various watch post as well as the comparatively safe routes. According to the instructions of the routes, for a expert of the Spirit spring state to reach the next sentry post needed approximately half a month of time. This was under the prerequisite of being able to oppose the Snow ground demon beasts nearby.

Right now, the greatest threat was the invisible hand behind the scenes.

The person that was able to control an adult [Snow ground dragon ape] was definitely not simple.

If their route was discovered by this person behind the scenes, then they had only one path left: death.

Time passed second by second.

The sentries began using the cooking utensils they had uncovered, beginning to prepare food.

A while later, the fragrance of meat wafted within the ice cave.

“Huchi Huchi.....” Big Head was salivating, circling around the large bowl, and sticking out his tongue at Fan Yan and the others in a pleasing fashion. He completely did not have the attitude of a super battle companion that had just devoured an entire [Snow ground dragon ape].

Fan Yan and the others carefully played with Big Head to keep him happy.

The glutton very quickly familiar lay down and reclined in the embrace of the sentries, allowing them to scratch him.

The sentries was curious, but also at the same time they did not know whether to laugh or cry. Superior Ye’s battle companion, really was too close to humans and his outer appearance was too cute. If not for the fact that they had personally witnessed him devouring a [Snow ground dragon ape], the sentries really did not dare to believe that this was a battle companion.

Time quickly passed on.

The sentries did not now how many bowls of meat they had cooked.

The tens of bowls that they had prepared all ended up in the stomach of Big Head.

In truth, the sentries had never seen a dog that was so able to eat. Not to mention the fact that he had eaten a dragon ape, simply devouring ten cooked ten bowls of meat was too shocking. After it was cooked and still very hot, Big Head would just open his mouth and suck it into his stomach. He was not afraid of the heat in the slightest.

The sentries were about to cry.

If this continued on, all the meat they brought would be completely finished. And in the coming half a month of time, they could only suffer hunger.

But this was the dog of Superior Ye, and they could not find a rope to tie around his mouth ——what was even more tragic was that if they fought, the sentries would not win against that dog. If not for Ye Qingyu's intervention, they would most likely have been eaten by this big headed dog and became human skeletons with not even a hint of flesh.

“Huchi Huchi.....!”

Big Head's mouth was dripping with saliva, staring at the twelfth bowl of meat.

“What should we do?” The sentries looked at each other.

Yan Fan could not laugh or cry.

After the sentries had made preparations for the given the twelfth bowl to be devoured by this dog, Ye Qingyu finally stopped in the treatment of his injury.

Puk !

He opened his mouth and spat out a black jet of blood.

The blood was black as ink, and when it fell to the ground it would emit an odour of sharp unpleasantness.

“Superior.....” Fan Yan and the others quickly rushed over and surrounded him.

Ye Qingyu wiped away the traces of blood at the corner of his lips, a smile appearing on his expression. “I’m fine, the gathered blood located in the hidden injuries of my body has all been forced out. This is not too large a matter. After treating it several more times, the inner organs can return to their original position.....En, it’s so fragrant, did you prepare meat?”

“We just finished cooking.....” The sentry said half his sentence then suddenly thought of something. He turned his head to look.

The bowl was long empty.

Big Head was excitedly panting as his tongue licked the last drop of the meat stew into his mouth.

.....

.....

“Just what has happened?”

When Liu Yuancheng saw the gigantic skeleton of the dragon ape in front of him, apart from feeling rage, he also felt slightly perplexed.

What had happened?

After the soul bracelet had shattered, Liu Yuancheng realised that [Killing star] had already met its doom.

Just what kind of method, that after killing the dragon ape, would only leave the bones of the corpse behind?

Liu Yuancheng’s heart, faintly felt that he had overlooked something.

He uncovered the entire collapsed sentry post, finding twenty one corpses. Included within, was the four military officers that he had arranged beside Ye Qingyu. Then he carefully examined the identity of these people, meticulously investigating the injuries sustained by these people.

“Ye Qingyu is not within the dead.....”

“The four military officers died from a sword, and this should be from the same sword. Their bodies is nearly sliced apart.....a extremely fast sword!”

“Within the fragments of icy rock, there are also destroyed hidden weapons.....”

Liu Yuancheng closed his eyes. In his mind, he imagined everything that could have happened.

The death of the dragon ape, made him angry. But apart from anger, there was also a shred of apprehension. Originally everything was in his control, but after losing the secret dragon ape that he had always treated as a card under his sleeve he began to have doubts. Just what kind of secret was hidden on Ye Qingyu?

“No matter what, the watch post is already destroyed. Haha, even if the military investigates, they would think that it is destroyed by the demon race. They won't investigate anything leading to me. As for that Ye Qingyu.....” The ash coloured hair of Liu Yuancheng danced in the strong winds, his face sinister and malicious. “The watch post is already destroyed. Just where can you escape. Even if you hide yourself underground, I can dig you out like digging a rat from his hole.”

Liu Yuancheng activated his yuan qi, energy waves extending in all directions, searching for their tracks in all direction.

At the same time.

A thousand metres away.

A black robed figure stood silently in the snow and wind, a low chuckle emitting from his throat.

.....

Ye Qingyu was treating his injuries yet again.

The movement of his inner organs had injured his foundation. He needed time and rest before he could fully recover.

The Ye Qingyu right now, absolutely could not fight anyone. Otherwise, his inner organs would jolt about and the injuries he had sustained would worsen.

The destruction of the sentry post was already six hours ago.

One could imagine, that outside the ice cave was brightness and light.

Two hours later, Ye Qingyu awoke from his state.

The injuries had gotten a little better, but still not completely healed

“No matter what, I must treat my injuries then travel to the next sentry post.” Ye Qingyu made his decision. First, he must recover his strength.

Once he recovered, everything was possible. The ice cave was a comparatively safe location. If he went out, and was discovered by his enemies, he was dead for sure.

Fan Yan and the others also agreed on this point.

But they did not think that not even a hour later, danger would descend.

Liu Yuancheng had found the place they were hidden.